Magician of Cote

1. Cover
2. Title Page
3. About the story
4. Prologue
5. Vol 1-Ch-1 The ANHS
6. Vol 1-Ch 2-The Fortune
7. Vol 1-Ch-3 The Introduction
8. Vol-1 Ch-4 The Stalker
9. Vol-1 Ch-4.5 The Dorms
10. Vol-1 Ch-4.75 The Keyaki Mall
11. Vol-1-Ch-5 The childhood friend
12. Vol-1 Ch-6 The Boys
13. Vol-1 Ch-7 The Angel from Heaven
14. Vol-1 Ch-8 The Pledge
15. Vol-1 Ch-9 The One Stop
16. Vol-1 Ch-10 The Turn
17. Vol-1 Ch-11 The Mask
18. Vol-1 Ch-12 The Best Friend
19. Vol-1 Ch-13 The Horikitas
20. Vol-1 Ch-14 The Angels and Demons
21. Vol-1 Ch-15 The Clown
22. Vol-1 Ch-16 The Prestige
23. SS- The Frenemy
24. SS-The Anomaly
25. Volume 2 - Prologue
26. Vol-2 Ch-1 The Date
27. OAA
28. Vol-2 Ch-2 The Trap
29. Vol-2 Ch-3 The Case
30. Vol-2 Ch-4 The Creep
31. Vol-2 Ch-5 The Shy One
32. Vol-2 Ch-6 The Convincer
33. Vol-2 Ch-7 The Sleight
34. Vol-2 Ch-8 The Gaff
35. Vol-2 Ch-9 The Final Stand Part-1

36. Vol-2 Ch-10 The Final Stand Part-2
37. Vol-2 Ch-11 The Aftermath
38. SS-The Genius
39. SS-The Amusement Park
40. SS-The Birthday
41. Volume 3- Prologue
42. Vol-3 Ch-1 The Cruise
43. Vol-3 Ch-2 The Surprise
44. Vol-3 Ch-3 The Rules
45. Vol-3 Ch-4 The Fellowship
46. Vol-3 Ch-5 The First Day
47. I am back!!!!!!

Magician of Cote

Magician of Cote

by S D (Soumyadeep02)

Ayanokoji Kiyotaka , Demon of 4th generation arrives at ANHS in search of freedom from his past. He will go to any length to ensure his freedom, even if he has to lead a class of defects to become the most formidable class in the history of the school. Kiyotaka Kiyopon Haruka Matsushita #4- Nagumo #6- Ichinose #7- cote #7- Ryuen #7- Manabu #7- Ichinose #8- Kiryuin #9- Hirata #10- Ichika

Reads: 87823 | Votes: 3335 | Comments: 1184

First Published: 2024-02-19T06:21:11Z

Last Updated: 2025-06-17T14:39:06Z

About the story

Reads: 6574 | Votes: 119 | Comments: 63

In this story, Ayanokoji while living in the mansion with Matsuo came up with an idea of escaping the white room. ANHS provides 100% job guarantee, he could graduate the school as a merit student and land a job abroad, where his father would be unable to reach him unless risking his whiteroom project.

He is a master of adaptability and can quickly learn how to become a social elite by observing others. He will put on a mask of a good guy who is smart and physically capable.

This story would be following the canon but there will be a lot of things added to it. Some ideas, you would have seen somewhere but I will do my own spin on it.

Pairing is not decided. It will depend on the viewers.

The meaning behind the title is that whenever class d is in a tough spot or during special exam they win miraculously. Kiyo doesn't explain how he won to anybody other than a select few. So the people will view him as a magician who uses magic to win.

Kiyo will not be holding back rather leading the class himself. Also he will be joining student council.

The starting might feel slow but trust me it gets a lot better.

Prologue

Reads: 4950 | Votes: 133 | Comments: 6

I know this is kind of sudden but please, it will only take a moment . I want your honest opinion.

What is freedom ?

From what limited knowledge I have.
Individual freedom is one of the most significant things in the world, and it's a never-ending journey. It is the ability that makes us human and allows us to create our own life. Individual freedom is a fundamental human right. With individual freedom, you're free to make decisions for yourself, free to act according to your own will, free to think & speak, free to choose your own life path, and be yourself. That's why individual freedom is essential in everyone's lives in this modern world. Individual freedom can also come from finding joy in your life and being able to do what you love.

Freedom is not something that can be found through other things, situations, money, or another person. If you think you have to escape from society or live on the edge to achieve your freedom, it is not like this. Your true freedom is within you right now. Your best version of yourself and your best life is uncovered when you know what makes you genuinely happy, what is valuable in your life, what is truly important to you, and what sets your soul on fire.

So, if you're unfree in this free world, it is because of your own doing. If you want to be truly free and get your freedom, you'll make it happen as you're responsible for your life. You must be wondering why individual freedom is so important that I'm emphasizing it

Freedom is a basic instinct of human being. It is essential for their holistic personality development as well as overall well being. Freedom is inherent to our nature since we are born with it. This

isn't given to us by any governmental authority but we have these by virtue of being born as humans.

It is imperative to have access to basic rights and freedoms such as that of movement, expression, security. This expedites the process of putting a system of check on authority and governance in an attempt to ensure what is right and beneficial for the citizens of a nation.

The concept of individual freedom must be in accordance with social standards and must work in consonance with responsibility. "With great freedom comes great responsibility." This can rightly be put to use in the context of individual freedom, social responsibility and civil society. Since freedom implies responsibility considering that they're both sides of the same coin. Responsibility in turn leads to a feeling of social responsibility which creates a compulsion in the minds of citizens towards ensuring guarantee of rights such a human rights especially for the weak and the vulnerable, optimum utilisation of resources while concurrently ensuring minimum misuse.

The pattern is similar across the globe. Most countries vouch for a fair judiciary, free media, competent elections, right to speak and to express oneself and that of being able to practice the religion of their choice.

That being said will I ever be truly free?

Vol 1-Ch-1 The ANHS

Reads: 4417 | Votes: 130 | Comments: 4

1st April. The first day of my high school or any school honestly speaking. If you're asking why is that? You will get your answer.

I was riding a public bus to school. While I was busy reading my book, 'The Big Sleep' by Raymond Chandler. The story is noted for its complexity, with characters double-crossing one another and secrets being exposed throughout the narrative. The title is a euphemism for death; the final pages of the book refer to a rumination about "sleeping the big sleep". Truly a worthwhile read.

The bus picked up more and more passenger. Most of them were young people wearing high school uniforms.

There was also a frustrated salary worker, who looked like the type to have once mistakenly groped someone aboard a crowded bus. An unsteady elderly lady stood in front of me, wobbling so badly I thought she was indanger of falling. Considering I'd known how packed this bus would likely be, I supposed I was simply reaping what I'd sown by getting on.I was fortunate to have found a seat, but it was still crowded.

After making up my mind, l gave the seat to the old lady. She was clearly struggling to stand up and I felt bad. She genuinely thanked me and commented on my kindness.

People who had noticed the old lady, looked at me with respect and admiration. It is interesting how one gesture can make or break your image.

One of them was a young, well built blonde man of my age. He gave me an uninterested look and continued to listen to music in his earphones.

Soon, we arrived at our destination and all the students started exiting the bus.

Tokyo Metropolitan Advanced Nurturing High School , created by the government for the sole purpose of developing future leaders. It boasts a 100% employment and college entry rate, and with thorough, state-directed teaching methods, it spares no effort in pursuing the nation's desired future. It was situated in an artificial island connected to the main city through a single bridge. The area of campus is almost 1000000 square metres, twice the size of Vatican City. It takes it pride in being autonomous , it uses renewable energy and renewable resources , producing no greenhouse gases. It generates energy from solar panels and windmills spread throughout the island , store it in batteries and use automation technology to manage their systems . Rainwater harvesting and greywater recycling is used. It has earthquake resistant buildings and underground bunkers.

I stopped for a moment, took a deep breath and entered through the main gate.

Into a whole new world.

Author's note-
Anhs here is more bigger and more technologically advanced as I wanted the school to be different from the canon. There will be many new changes. Hopefully you guys will like it.
Although the fic will be updated regularly, there could be some breaks but hopefully not more than a week.
I have plans to continue this till second year, so no worries about abandoning.
How you guys liked the changes and what would you like to see.
Feel free to comment, criticism is acceptable.
About the characters, if you hate any particular character (other than the clowns), try to read with an open mind as I will like to change them for the better.

Have a wonderful day

Vol 1-Ch 2-The Fortune

Reads: 4026 | Votes: 139 | Comments: 37

As I entered the classroom that was allotted to me in the acceptance letter, I searched for the seat that bore my student ID. It was at the back of my room, near the window. It had a great view towards the ocean.

I looked around the room, it was already half filled with students. The student sitting in front of me was busy reading something in his mobile phone which was provided by the school.

He was a little chubby and had spiky black hair and wore glasses, he seemed like a guy who would just blend in the background. But by the looks of it was quite handy with tech.

"Hello, my name is Ayanokoji Kiyotaka."

I had mustered every ounce of my self confidence to speak that sentence, if no reply was given back, l was pretty sure I would have never spoken to anybody in my high school life.

"Greetings, Ayanokoji-dono, I see that you are sitting in the protagonist seat."



"Huh, What do you mean by protagonist seat. "
"It seems that you are quite oblivious to the culture, just like an OP protagonist entering the human world, are you hiding your abilities as well? " he asked.

Well putting aside the fact that I didn't understand a word he said I tried to change the subject with the subtlety of a shouting gorilla.
"Sorry, but I didn't get your name." I said.

"Forgive me, your highness. Sotomura Hideo, at your curtsey. But you can call me 'Proffesor', Ayanokoji-dono"

"Nice to meet you professor but I don't understand why are you calling me highness, isn't it used to address a member of the royal family. "

Even he was bewildered at my obliviousness. While I was talking with professor, a beautiful girl with long black hair with one braid tied with a pink bow and gradient red eyes sat on the seat beside me. If someone told me she was a year or two older.

At first I thought of approaching her and introducing myself, but after seeing her expressionless face, my instincts told me otherwise.

The well built blonde guy was also here, admiring himself in his mirror while sitting.

After a few minutes, the first bell rang. At that precise moment, a woman entered the classroom. When I first saw her,my initial impression was that she firmly believed in discipline. If I had to guess, I would have placed her age at thirty. She wore a suit and had delicate features. Her hair seemed long, and she'd tied it into a ponytail.

"Ahem. Good morning to you, students. I'm the instructor for Class D. My name is Chiyabashira Sae. I usually teach Japanese history. However, at this school, we do not change classrooms for each grade. For the next three years, I will be acting as your homeroom teacher, so I hope to get to know all of you." while speaking she gave me a longer stare than the others, it was barely noticeable, 'a blink and you miss' if you will.

"It's a pleasure to meet you. The entrance ceremony will be in the gymnasium one hour from now, but first, I will distribute written materials with information about this school's special rules. I will also hand out the admissions guide." The students in the front seats passed back the familiar documents I'd received after being accepted.This school differed from the multitude of other Japanese high schools in a few key ways. Here, all students were required to live in dormitories located on school premises. Although there was another option of living in your own non furnished house in the school premises. This one was not free. You would have to pay something called 50,000 points per month or 1.5 million private points for permanent residence till graduation excluding utilities. It could be shared between two students but they should be of the same school year.

Also, except for special cases, such as studying abroad, students were forbidden to contact anyone outside the school. Even contact with your immediate family was forbidden without authorization. Naturally, leaving school grounds without permission was also strictly forbidden. However, the campus also came equipped with many excellent facilities. With its own artificial beach, amusement park, botanical garden, mall, karaoke spot, theater, café, boutique, and more, you could easily compare this school to a small city.

This school boasted another unique feature: the S System.

"I will now hand out your student ID cards. By using your card, you can access any of the facilities on campus, purchase goods from the store, and so on. It acts like a credit card. However, it is imperative that you pay attention to the points that you spend. At this school, you can use your points to buy anything. Anything located on the school premises is available for purchase. "

Our points, loaded onto our student ID cards, acted as a kind of currency. The lack of paper money would prevent many students' financial troubles. However, students needed to keep a watchful eye on their spending habits. At any rate, the school provided these points free of charge.

"Your student cards can be used simply by swiping them through the machine scanner. The method is simple, so you shouldn't get confused. Points are automatically deposited into your account on the first of every month. You should all have received 100,000 points already. Keep in mind that one point is worth one yen. No further explanation should be necessary." The classroom erupted. In other words, we had received a 100,000-yen monthly allowance from the school upon admission. I'd expect nothing less from a massive institution run by the Japanese government. 100,000 yen is a rather large sum of money for a high schooler.

In the fiscal year 2023, the budget of the Japanese national government's general account for education and science expenditures was set at around 5.42 trillion Japanese yen. The government spending 576 million yen per year just to give allowance to the students of a single school doesn't come as suspicious at all.

"Shocked by the amount of points you've been given? This school evaluates its student's talents. Everyone here has passed the entrance examination, which itself speaks to your value and potential. The amount you've received reflects the evaluation of your worth. You can use your points without restraint. After graduation, however, all of your points return to the school. Because it's impossible to exchange your points for cash, there's no advantage to saving them. Once points have been deposited into your account, it's up to you how to spend them. Do as you like. In the event that you don't want to spend your points, you may transfer them to someone else. However, extorting money from your peers is not allowed. This school monitors bullying very carefully."

As bewilderment spread among the students, Chiyabashira-sensei looked over the room.

At this I raised my hand. Sae sensei looked at me with excitement in her eyes as she thought I would ask her about how many points we will get next month but, I asked-

"Sensei, you said we can buy anything inside the school premise. Yes? "

Her excitement increased. She nodded.

"So, can we buy a whole shop?"

At this many of my classmates looked at me as if I was an idiot. A blonde girl with long hair looked at me as if I was one of her people. As they thought I was talking about buying everything in a shop.

"Don't misunderstand me, l am talking about buying the ownership or a share of the shop. "
"Why would you like to buy the ownership of a shop?" Sensei asked.

"Well for Investment purposes, if I buy a shop, l will have a steady flow of points till I graduate." I said. Hearing this the blonde boy stopped admiring himself and looked at me.

"And why would want more points, after all you already have 100,000 points." she said, clearly trying to coax the real reason out of me.

"Well, you can never have enough points.". I said, as I shot down her hopes.
"But you didn't answer my question, can we? "
"It depends on the current owner, if he or she accepts your deal, then nobody is stopping you." she answered. All her excitement gone.

I didn't bother asking any other question, as I got what I wanted.

That will do
Even though this was a rules explaining chapter, there are many new things that I added, can you guys spot it.
As for people who are asking why didn't he just tell the class about the s system.
Remember, he does everything for a reason.
Let me know what do you think about the changes and this chapter. Next chapter would be the introduction.
The first volume may feel slow but trust me it is all set up towards something good.
And once we reach the exams that's where it will get good, l have thought of many ideas for the special exams and even thinking about adding some new special exams. Looking forward for it.
The conversation between characters may feel awkward or forced, l apologize for that, as I am not good in conversation. You would have to give me a little pass there.
Anyways
That will be all for today.
As usual have a wonderful day.

Vol 1-Ch-3 The Introduction

Reads: 3494 | Votes: 130 | Comments: 36

"Something not right here, wasting huge amount of money on students just because they passed the entrance exam, that's illogical." the black haired beauty beside me mumbled to herself.

"I know right, it's like they want to spoil us." I tried to start a conversation with her.

As soon as she heard me her glare came back. Looking at me like I am scum of the earth.

"What, Did I do anything to you ?"

"No, just know your place, don't try to talk with me."

"How do you expect me to not talk to the person who will sit beside me for the whole year."

And she is ignoring me.

Oh well I tried. As all of this was going on the class were talking amongst themselves about things to buy, places to visit. Atleast nobody is dumb enough to rent the private quarters. It's a trap set by the school for spending money. Even though you will have freedom to do whatever you want with no curfew, you will go bankrupt. Anyway.

"Everybody, can you please to me for a moment ?" I stood up and asked.

The whole class stopped talking and looked at me, atleast they listen.

“Starting today, we’re all going to be classmates. Therefore, I think it’d be good for us to introduce ourselves and become friends as

soon as possible. We still have some time until the entrance ceremony. What do you say?" I took the lead.

"I agree, we don't know anything about each other, not even our names." said a guy of average height with blonde hair and brown eyes.

“My name’s Hirata Yousuke. Back in junior high, lots of people called me Yousuke. Feel free to use my first name! I guess my hobby is sports in general, but I especially like soccer. I’m planning on playing soccer here, too. Nice to meet you!” he said.

The girls had hearts in there eyes. He has potential to become one of the core members of the class.

" I will go next, my name is Ayanokoji Kiyotaka, I was homeschooled my entire life, so I never had any friends but I would like to change that. I am fairly good in studies and in sports. My favorite hobbies is to play chess, piano and calligraphy. I would like to learn new stuff, if you have suggestions then please recommend me."

My speech got me the Hirata treatment. Girls with heart in there eyes and boys with hatred.

"Well, then how about we start introducing from the front ?" I said and sat down.

The girl with shoulder-length brown hair and yellow-gradient violet eyes at the front started panicking, she seems like the shy type.

“M-my name is…Inogashira Ko-Ko…”

"It's okay to go slow, there's no need to rush" as I said that, she blushed red for some reason. But she calmed herself and continued.

“My name is Inogashira…Kokoro. Um, my hobby is sewing. I’m pretty good at knitting. I-It’s nice to meet you all.”

“I’m Yamauchi Haruki. I competed in table tennis during elementary school, and in junior high I was the ace player on our baseball team. I was number four. I got hurt during the inter-high

school championships, though, and I'm undergoing rehab now. Nice to meet you." said a boy with an ugly face.

"Good joke buddy, you participated in high school tournament while being in junior high? " girls who were repulsed by him started laughing after hearing what I said.

He gave me a glare, which was comparable to a mule's glare and sat down.

"Well then, I'm next, aren't I?" said a cheerful girl. She stood up and continued.

"My name is Kushida Kikyou. None of my friends from junior high made it to this school, so I'm alone here. I'd like to get to know all of your names and faces right away and become friends as soon as possible!"

"My first goal is to become friends with everyone. So, after we're finished with introductions, I'd love for you to share your contact information with me!"

"So, after school or during vacations, I want to make all sorts of memories with lots of people. Please feel free to invite me to lots and lots of events!"

It was supposed to be an introduction, nobody asked you about your life story.

"Anyway, I've talked for a long time, so I'll end my introduction here."

Now she's reading minds.

The next student who was supposed to introduce himself glared back. His hair was dyed a fiery red. He both looked and sounded like a delinquent.

"What, are we a bunch of little kids or something? I don't need to introduce myself. People who want to do that can go ahead. Just leave me out of it."The red-haired guy scowled at me.

Some of the girls glared at the guy with red hair. “Isn’t it fine to introduce yourself?” one of them snapped.

“Yeah, yeah!”

“Shut it. I don’t care. I didn’t come here to make friends.” The guy got up and was about to leave when I called him.

"Where are you going red hair guy?"

"What did you call me?" he had a face that said if I continue, I will feel pain.

"Well, I don't know your name, so how should I address you? I will have to continue to call you red hair guy"

"Don't call me that, just call me Sudo" he said with an angry face.

"See, that's why introduction is important. Now kindly sit down." I said with some authority and he complied.

“I’m Ike Kanji. I love girls, and I hate pretty boys. I’m currently in the market for a new girlfriend. It’s nice to meet you! All the better if you’re a cutie or a beauty!”the next ugly guy said.

It was difficult to tell if he was joking or not. At the very least, the girls looked at him with revulsion.

“Wow. You are so cool, Ike-kun,” one girl said, in a completely emotionless voice.

“Seriously? Seriously? Oh, man. I mean, I thought that I wasn’t bad oranything, but…heh heh.”He blushed.

"I think you should buy an understanding sarcasm book, Ike."

On my comment he too started to glare at me like ugly guy no. 1.

Next up was the combative boy from the bus. While inspecting his bangs in a hand mirror, he combed his hair.

“Excuse me, can you introduce yourself?” Hirata asked.



“Hmph. Fine.”He smirked like an aristocrat, displaying his impudent attitude. As he shifted in his seat, I thought he might leave, but Kouenji placed both of his legs on his desk and introduced himself.

“My name is Kouenji Rokusuke. As the sole male heir to the Kouenji

conglomerate group, I will soon be tasked with carrying Japan into the future.I sincerely look forward to making your acquaintance, ladies.”He aimed his introduction solely at the opposite sex, rather than the entire class. After hearing that he was rich, some of the girls looked at him with sparkling eyes, while others regarded Kouenji as if he were nothing more than a weirdo. That was only natural.

“Starting today, I will mercilessly punish anyone who makes me uncomfortable. Please exercise proper precaution so that you may avoid that.”

“Um, Kouenji-kun. What exactly do you mean when you say, ‘anyone who makes me uncomfortable’?” asked Hirata, who looked uneasy at the word “punish.”

“I meant exactly what I said. If asked to give an example, well… I would say I hate ugly things, for instance. So, if I saw something ugly, I would do just as I said.”

"Ah, you mean Yamauchi and Ike." I said.

He looked at me and smirked. The class started to laugh and the ugly guys... well let them be.

The introductions continued, some people left, some remained. I didn't the people who were leaving as they didn't interest me. My black haired neighbour was one of them.

The last girl stood up. She had long brown hair that has bangs swept to the right and blue eyes. She is cute.

"Hello, everybody I am Matsushita Chiaki. I am fairly good in studies and in sports. My favorite hobby is to play chess, practicing violin and singing." she concluded and sat down.

Why did it feel like I heard the same thing, oh wait I said the same thing other than the violin and singing part.

Is she copying me? Now I am intrigued.

Introduction chapter done next up

The entrance ceremony and entering the dorm room for the first time.

As you can see Horikita is ignored for now but don't worry she will come around in volume 2.

But Matsushita will be taking the main spot for now.

She is an underused character in LN. She was introduced and then swiftly ignored for the rest of the year 2.

Here she will be one of the core members of the class.

Kiyo is sassy here and will leave no chance to roast the clowns. Interested on your thoughts.

Have a wonderful day

Vol-1 Ch-4 The Stalker

Reads: 3408 | Votes: 118 | Comments: 11

After the introductions came to end. 70-80 percent of the students headed toward the dormitories. The remaining students quickly formed into groups. Some made their way to cafés, while the louder ones went out for karaoke.

It seems I was the only one going to the entrance ceremony.

As I entered the auditorium, where the ceremony was taking place. I saw the other classes of our year for the first time. Although there was something interesting that I noticed. All students from Class A were present and were standing in discipline, same goes for Class B, although some of them were talking. Few students from Class C were absent but the rest were talking as well and from Class D, I am the only one till now, as the girl named Matsushita also joined me.

As Chairman Sakayanagi was giving his speech, he looked at me.

Was it because no student from Class D came or specifically because of me. I don't know.

After him a tall, well-built boy with short black hair with square-rimmed glasses took the stage.

"Welcome to the new first years, I am Horikita Manabu, Student council President.
As we begin this new school year, let us remember the opportunities that lie before us. Every challenge we face and every obstacle we overcome are stepping stones toward our dreams. Let us embrace each lesson, each experience, and each friendship as a chance to grow and evolve. Thank you, and let's make this school year truly remarkable!"

A short but formal speech, during his speech I was observing the

students of other classes and comparing them with ours. Confirming my theories about something.

As the ceremony ended, I approached Matsushita.



"Are you stalking me?"

"Huh?"

"During class introduction, you were staring at me, not like the other stares. Then you said the exact lines as me and now when the whole class is absent, you're the only one here."

"Well, I was interested in the ceremony."

I gave her a suspicious look.

"So, I was going to the convenience store, do you want to accompany me?"

She was surprised by this, but started to walk with me to the store without giving an answer.

On entering the store, we started to collect the things we need in a basket. It was clearly an advanced store, in the place of cashier. There was a monitor placed where you could scan the bar code of the product, and it will enter the items in to the system, creating the invoice and paying by scanning the QR code or swiping your card in the machine .
Although there were some helpers present for the people in need of help.

Starting a life in a dorm, you need a lot of things for basic needs, picking up soap, toothbrush, shampoo etc.

Even though we weren't talking, it didn't feel uncomfortable shopping with Matsushita.

"Noodle cups. They have so many kinds."
These were definitely one reason I'd come to the convenience store.

"So, do you really like this kind of stuff? I don't think they are good for your health."

"I have never tasted these before."

"Really, not once!" her expression showed her disbelieve.

"My parents were very strict about my diet. They wouldn't let me eat any unhealthy stuff, but now that I am free, I can try everything."

I didn't want the conversation to stop so I tried to use witty joke.

"If you're looking for something a cut above the rest, how about this razor with five blades? I bet it'd do the job."

"Why in the world would I want to shave with that?" she replied, clearly astounded by my joke.

I grinned smugly and pretended to shave an imaginary beard, but for some reason she didn't laugh.

Far from it. Instead, she looked at me with pity.

"I know that you wanted to try a joke, but your humor needs some work and also you can't say that to a woman you just met, they could take the wrong way."

It looked like my jokes failed colossally with women.

"But you didn't." I tried helplessly to salvage the situation.

"Yes, because I knew you didn't mean it that way and also I know you."

I sighed and gave up.

"Hey. What's up with this?"

While looking around the store, desperate for a new topic, I'd found something strange. Some toiletries and food had been tucked away in the corner of the convenience store. At first glance, they appeared to be the same as the other items, but there was one big difference.

"Free?" Matsushita apparently also thought it was strange, so she picked up one of the items. Daily necessities like toothbrushes and bandages had been stuffed into a clearance bin and labeled "Free." The bin was also marked with the proviso "three items per month."

These were obviously different from the store's other goods.

"Hey, shut it! Just wait a sec! I'm looking for it right now!"

A sudden, loud voice drowned out the store's peaceful background music.

"Come on, hurry up. You have a line of people waiting on you!"

"Oh, yeah? Well, if they have any complaints, they can take it up with me!"

Apparently, trouble was brewing by the monitor. A dispute had broken out between two young men who were glaring at each other. I recognized the one with the thoroughly ill-tempered look on his face. It was the student from my class, the guy with the red hair who said his name was Sudo. He had his hands full of noodle cups.

"What's going on here?" I asked.

"Huh? you?" his scowl is back.

"Calm down, It sounded like there was some trouble, what happened?"

"After class I went to my dorm room and I forgot my student ID card and my phone. Forgot that it pretty much acts as our money from now on, too." I looked at his empty hands. He'd put the noodle cups away. He started to leave, probably heading back to the dorms

"I can pay for you. I mean, it'd be annoying if you had to head all the way back to the dorms. You can pay me back tomorrow in class."

"That's true. You're right, it'd be absolutely annoying. Thanks man."

Wrapping things up, we presented our student ID cards to the machine. Since we knew how to operate it, our transaction was speedy.

As we exited the store, I found Sudou seated outside, waiting for

me. When I saw him, he gently waved me over. I waved in return, feeling somewhat touched .

"Are you really going to eat here?" I asked him.

"Of course. It's just common sense." Sudou perplexed me with his matter-of-fact reply.

"Hey, you guys first years? This is our spot." As Sudou slurped his ramen, three boys called out to us. They seemed to have come out of the same store and were carrying the same brand of noodle cups.

"Who are you? I was already here. You're in the way. Get lost," Sudou barked.

"You hear this guy? 'Get lost,' he says. What a cocky little first-yearpunk."

The three laughed in Sudou's face. Sudou shot up, slamming his noodle cup against the ground. The broth and noodles splashed everywhere.

"'First-year punk,' huh? You tryin' to make fun of me, huh?!"

Sudou had an extremely short fuse. If I had to judge, he seemed like the type to immediately threaten anyone or anything that crossed him.

"You're awfully mouthy, considering we're second-year students. We already put our bags here, see?" Plop! With those words, the second-year upperclassmen students put down their bags and guffawed loudly.

"See, our stuff's here. Now, beat it," one of them said.

"You got a lot of guts, asshole." Sudou didn't back down, unfazed by being outnumbered. It looked like fists were going to fly at any moment. I, of course, could have stopped it, but I wanted to let it play out.

"Oh, wow, scary. What class are you in? Wait, never mind. I think I know. You're in Class D, aren't you?"

"Yeah, so what?" Sudou snapped.The upperclassmen students exchanged glances and burst into laughter.

"You hear that? He's in Class D! I knew it! It was a dead giveaway!"

"Huh? What's that supposed to mean? Hey!" As Sudou barked at them, the boys grinned and stepped backwards.

"Aw, you poor things. Since you're 'defective,' we'll let you off the hook, just for today. Let's get going, guys."

"Hey, don't run away! Hey!" Sudou shouted.

"Yeah, yeah, keep on yapping. You guys'll be in hell soon enough anyway."

"Senpai, which class are you from?"

"We are from 2A, why? "

"Nothing, just curious."

"Ah, damn it! If those had been nice second-year students, or cute girls, that would've been great. Instead, we had to deal with those annoying morons." Sudou didn't bother to clean up his mess. He thrust his hands into his pockets before heading back.

I suppose once a defect always a defect. After cleaning up the mess, Matsushita and I started walking towards the dorms.

"From the limited knowledge that I have, I thought girls like expensive products and yet you bought products with minimum rate." I questioned her, ignoring the fact that I was doing the same, I even took three items from the free section.

"Who told you that? "

"Internet"

"Not everything said is true, when it comes to internet. And about the products, I just have a gut feeling."

"You're copying me"
"No, I am not"
"Yes, you're. Since the day have started you are doing whatever I am doing. So what's the real reason." I inquired. She hesitated but then answered.

"Well, from the moment I entered the school, I have a weird feeling that this school is more than what it shows. I mean it supposedly produces 'the best of next generation' and yet it has students like Ike or Yamauchi, actually most of our class. Do you really think that they are gonna be the future's best?"

"I see, so you think that school is hiding something. But it still doesn't explain why are you following me?"

"Today in our class, everybody was talking about how they were going to spend their points and how they were going to enjoy themselves, you were the only one who was different, even sensei noticed that when she glanced at you. That's why I was following you, to find out what you know. "

As I listened to the girl in front of me, I was clearly impressed. I had already given up on my classmates, but she is clearly one of the smarter student. Not only she noticed what I was doing but also deduced that I am different from the look of hope sensei gave me.

"You, clearly know and observe a lot more than the others."

"I was raised that way, my parents are moderately wealthy people. I would achieve outstanding results in school, whether be it physically or intellectually and they would get me whatever I desired." she told her story.

"Then did you notice the 8 hidden camera in our class, alongside cameras present in every hallway, roads or shops."

"No, I didn't, where were the cameras in the class? " she asked surprised.

"4 in the corners and 4 in the walls. Did you notice that sensei didn't say that we will receive 100,000 points next month or that

'The amount you've received reflects the evaluation of your worth.'"

"That's ye-no, those are such small details."

"According to my theory, the points that we will receive next month will depend on our performance in exams and our behavior in school premise, that's what the cameras are for. It is further proved by the availability of free items, so that student's basic needs are covered even if they don't have any points, the senior near the free items were example of that, I asked one of them from which class they were, when you were busy and he replied class 2 D. Also the seniors now practically explained me the whole s system. The school has divided it's students depending on their merit. If you have noticed the difference in behavior of classes, A had the best students, then B, then C and lastly D.
It's a class based competition, and the more points a class has better there standing is. That's why those students from 2A were mocking us because our class is full of 'defectives' as he said. Got it? "

"How did you do that? We should tell this to our class", she was stunned.

"No, It's still a half baked theory, it could also turn out to be wrong and nobody will believe us anyway without any solid proof."

While talking, we had reached our dorms. Let's see what my home for next 3 years looks like.

This was a big one

How do you guys feel about Chiaki, she is observant and smart but nowhere near Kiyo.

I think I am getting the grasp on conversations a little more, but still a long way to go.

This will be all for today,

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-4.5 The Dorms

Reads: 2666 | Votes: 103 | Comments: 10

It was around 1 pm when Matsushita and I made our way back to the dormitory. It was 16 floors tall building, with a biophilic design. At the reception desk, I received a key card for Room 401. Looking around it seems like we were in a five star hotel rather than dorms.

We were also given a handbook containing information about the dorm's rules, while we were waiting for the elevator. I quickly flipped through the handbook, which only detailed the most basic things that we needed for our daily routines. The dates and times for garbage disposal were listed, as well as a notice about avoiding excessive noise. I also saw notes about not wasting water or electricity, and so on.

"So, they don't place restrictions on electricity or gas usage?"

I'd assumed that the school would deduct the cost from our points. This school really went to great lengths to have a perfect system for its students. However, I was a little surprised that they'd implemented co-ed dormitories. After all, this was a high school, so the rules stated that unsuitable romantic relationships were frowned upon. In short, sex was strictly forbidden...obviously. I mean, a member of the clergy wouldn't say that engaging inillicit sexual activity was okay. Although the floors were divided, first 8 floors were for the boys and top 8 were for the girls. It's a shame as the top floors would have a better view. There were many more rules like you can't go to girls floor after 8 pm and you can't leave the dorms after 11 pm.

"What's your room number?" I asked Matsushita.

"1301, your? "

"401, we both got 01's, coincidences can be freaky. "

As the elevator arrived I pushed the button for 4th floor and she did the same for 13th.

"Hey, after checking out the room will you meet me in the lobby at 6?"

"Why? " I asked.

"Well, gas is free so clearly cooking is the best option to save some points and for that we will need utensils. So I was thinking that we could go to the mall and buy the required stuff." she explained.

"But, I don't know how to cook." I said.

"Don't worry, I will teach in exchange for points." she said mischievously.

"OK, how many points are we talking about? "

"Huh, I didn't think you would actually agree to it. "

"Why not it will be a long term investment. I would be saving points for three years, so it doesn't matter if I spend some now. Anyway, I will be there at 6 sharp." I said exiting the elevator as my floor had arrived.

I entered my room, for the next three years. The first thing I saw was a manual about smart apartment. It explained how I could control the lights and temperature through voice command or a Mobile App. Safe locking system which would notify me about every entry exit from my dorm room.

All in all, it was a cozy looking place, with a single bed, cupboard, study table, separate area for kitchen which was empty, balcony with a beautiful scenery and bathroom with a bathtub.

After a hectic day, I tried to take a nap till 5 pm.

A short chapter but finally we have reached the dorms.

Next chapter will be exploring more ANHS.

I want to finish this arc fast so that we reach the good stuff, but good things come to those who wait.

The more I am writing this story, the more I am inclining towards Chiaki as a pairing atleast for the first half of the year, but let's see what happens.

We finally reached 1 k on the story, just in 2 days which is crazy.

Thank you guys for your support, it means a lot hopefully I won't dissapoint you.

Till then, Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-4.75 The Keyaki Mall

Reads: 2496 | Votes: 96 | Comments: 6

At 6 pm, I met Matsushita in the lobby and we walked towards Keyaki mall.

We followed the sign boards and reached the mall, it was a five above the ground storeys and two basement storeys mall complex, easily one of the biggest structure in the campus. Covering 128,000 sq m. it had a enormous tree-like LED installation is placed at the main entrance, many students were taking selfies with it.

Entering from the main entrance, the west wing - high-end fashion walk offers a luxurious shopping experience with bright and elegant atmosphere.

The east wing - Entertainment Hotspot provides leisure entertainment that houses game zones and Dolby Cinema, supplemented with a warm and relaxing ambience.

At the central atrium - interactive cultural gallery, the natural sunlight and scenery are injected into the interiors, enhancing the exterior-interior interaction.

The rooftop - Four Season Garden is filled with landscape to create a serene environment.

We started exploring from the top and made our way to the bottom. Many people gave us looks as we were walking together.

The above ground floors consisted of many famous fashion or food chain but the basement floors were the interesting part.

Most of the students here were from 2nd or 3rd year and the stores were selling local or cheap products as opposed to the branded and expensive goods that were sold on the upper floors.

While exploring the second basement we came up on a peculiar store. If you didn't pay attention then it would come off as a junk store. But I saw an opportunity.

Matsushita and I entered the store, it had everything from electronics, furniture, kitchen equipment to recreational items.

The store was mostly empty, the products were the same branded one's sold above but by the looks of it they weren't new, although the prices were exponentially less compared to the original.

A clerk came to us and asked what we were looking for.

"I assume these are second hand products, right?"

"Yes sir, the things that are left behind by the graduating students or are sold to us by students who need points, are displayed here. "

"Why would students need more points , aren't they already getting 100k points? "

"You guys don't know? Oh! Are you from the first year? There are rare instances when the first years come to this floor. Well, some students just want to return the expensive stuff they already bought and don't want to use in exchange for points, not that they need anymore."

It was a nice save by him, but I am not falling for that.

"Don't worry, I already know about the points system here. We get points according to our evaluation done by the school."

"What! How? There has never been a student who figured it out on the first day."

"I guess, I got lucky, but I want to ask why are the prices different for the same stuff. Like the television over there is for 5,000 points whereas these are for just 500."

"The prices depends on the state of the product, the 5,000 points one is second hand but still works whereas these have issues, either they don't work at all or are damaged. "

Hearing this, a little idea came into my mind.

"But they can be repaired right?"

"Yes, but you need the skills and the required parts. Most students don't have the required skillset to repair these, so these just get dusty sitting here. Although there is a shop in the campus which sells spare electronic parts, I can give you the location if you want."

Well most normal highschoolers wouldn't know how to handle complex circuits, or electronic equipment but I certainly could.

After this, I went on a shopping spree, buying television, refrigerator, oven and other things. At the end I only had to spend 4,500 points to buy everything that a well furnished house needs. The items would be directly delivered to my room. Matsushita did the same when I promised her that I will repair her stuff as well as a payment for my cooking classes. Now, I will be learning cooking for free. In the midst of all this, I saw a yogurt maker. I don't know what possessed me but I wanted to buy it. We took our leave from the store and went back to our dorm room.

And thus finally ends the chaotic first day of my high school life.

Finished another chapter although it took time, my exams are going on so updates will be a little slow until mid March. Although I will try to post atleast two chapters a week.

From next chapter we will return to the main story.

I understand, if last two chapters were a little underwhelming due to all the description but I wanted to explore the campus as much as possible. In the LN we have little to no description about keyaki mall or rest of the school.

Lastly we completed 2k views. It's amazing to see when something you do is recognized by others.

Trust me when we reach the special exams, it would get so much better.

Anyway, that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1-Ch-5 The childhood friend

Reads: 2609 | Votes: 95 | Comments: 26

On the second day of our school, well I suppose it was the first day of our class -we spent most of our time running over the course objectives. Apparently, many of the students were quite surprised, if not a little disappointed, by how genuinely warm and friendly the teachers at this school looked. Sudou had already made a spectacle of himself by spending most of the class asleep. I thought that the teachers would notice, but they showed no signs of doing so. After all, it was up to every individual student whether or not he or she wanted to listen in class. I suppose they will reap what they sow.

Soon it was lunch time, many people stood up and left with their new acquaintances.
I was just leaving to eat in the cafeteria when Hirata and his friends arrived. By friends I mean half the girls in our class.



"Ayanokouji-kun we were going to the cafeteria for lunch, would you like to join us."

"Sure, do you mind if I ask Matsushita too?" I asked. This was the perfect opportunity to start my plans.

"There is no problem, right?" he asked other girls accompanying him.

"If Hirata-kun says so." replied the blonde shopping freak. The reason I named her that because yesterday I saw her and her friends literally buying a clothes store. No doubt she already spent most of her points.

As we reached the cafeteria, there was a counter to buy token for the food. Then there was the line for the food. It took quite a while for us to finally be seated. Matsushita and I along with a girl named Satou, Nene Mori, Ichihashi sat on one side while Hirata, Karuizawa, Shinohara, Mei yu Wang and Nishimura sat on the other side.

"So Ayanokouji-kun, yesterday you said you are quite good at studies. Are you a genius?" Satou asked excitedly.

"I mean, I don't think I am a genius but I can get respectable marks." I replied.

"Stop the lie, Kiyotaka. Once the results come for our first exams, they will know already." said Matsushita.

"I didn't lie, Chiaki. I can get respectable marks."

"Huh, do you guys know each other? Calling each other with given name." Karuizawa asked.

"We are actually childhood friends. If you remember yesterday we both gave the same introduction.We were homeschooled together. That's why I knew Kiyotaka here is actually a genius."

"Oh really, that's so cool. I wish I was a genius. I wouldn't have to study and just attend the exam and get full marks." Mori said while daydreaming.

"Ayanokouji-kun, what are you eating? Why does it look so disgusting." Karuizawa asked making a face.

"It's the free vegetables set. I saw some seniors eating it, so I gave it a try."

"But who in their right mind would eat that!"

"I asked the senior he said he didn't had any points to pay. I wonder why?"

"Someone who is a spendthrift maybe." Shinohara joined the conversation.

"But how did they spent all 100k points in a day?" asked Chiaki.

"I think there's something we are missing. Yesterday, at the convenience store they were some seniors buying free stuff and today this. It's like they didn't received there 100k points. Don't you guys think so?"

" Pff- are you joking Ayanokouji-kun, yesterday sensei clearly said we would receive 100k points each month. Were you not paying attention?" said Karuizawa mockingly.

"Yeah, I guess so. My bad." I ended the conversation.

After a while Chiaki and I left saying that we had some important business in the library.

"So, what was that about? All the story we made up, all the clues. Just to be made fun of. Just a waste of time. Why are our classmates so dumb." Chiaki ranted.

"Actually, it was not a waste of time. The story was for explaining why we are going everywhere together since yesterday . The clues we gave may not be of use. But it planted the idea at least. When the school system will be explained, the first thing that will come to their mind will be this. Now until that time arrives, we have to repeat this process with every group in our class."

"But why can't we just straight up tell them?"

"No, if you observed our class. They will clearly not believe anything we say. Just like Karuizawa. The smokescreen that this school created in their mind is too thick to penetrate with logic. Once they experience it first hand, they will easily follow." I explained.

Chiaki was satisfied by my explanation kept quiet and walked alongside me.

As we reached the class, a girl with a sweet voice announced through the speakers.

"At five PM Japan Standard Time today, we will be holding a student club fair in Gymnasium No. 1. Students interested in joining a club, please gather in Gymnasium No. 1."

Looks like second opportunity is here.

Another one down.

Did I bait you with the title? It is all going according to the plan. He wants to create a net beneath the class d students, so that when the school pulls the rug. He would be there to catch them.

Next chapter will be club fair and the first appearance of my second favorite character after Koji. Manabu is a character I wanted more of and the farewell scene vol 11.5 is one of my favorite scenes.

How is the story so far?

Comment if you want to suggest something.

Interesting fact this story is #69 in Kiyotaka.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-6 The Boys

Reads: 2272 | Votes: 93 | Comments: 10

As the classes for the day ended. People started to leave for the gymnasium. Girls left in groups, mainly Kushida's group which consisted most of the girls in our class. Second group was of Karuizawa and her friends along with a kidnapped Hirata. Matsushita asked me if I wanted to join them but I denied.

I looked around the class and saw many boys leaving individually, girls had already formed groups but boys had still not interacted with each other. So I summoned all my courage and did something which is harder than studying quantum mechanics at age 8. I went to each of them separately and invited them to join the group. After all it is one thing to get invited than to start a conversation with a complete stranger. Some were hesitant and some outright denied, but I think I did good. Professor helped a lot too.

At last, we were on our way. Our group consisted of 8 boys. Proffesor, Yukimura, Miyake, Minami, Makida, Okitani, Ijuuin and me.

It was a little awkward at first but Professor broke the ice by talking about pop culture. Everyone started giving their opinions.

"So, this Star Wars. Sounds interesting, what is the plot?" I asked curiously.

They all looked at me like I was an alien.

"Ayanokoji-dono, did you by any chance live under a rock before coming here." Professor commented.

He didn't know how close he was to the truth.

"No, but my parents were very strict and didn't let me watch anything on television. Only thing I did was study or physical

activities."

"Really, I am the same, although not the physical activity part but I wasn't interested in television entertainment, studying was my way of having fun." Yukimura said enthusiasticly.

It seems after hearing my story, Yukimura got confidence as he wasn't the only nerd in this group.

"But doesn't it get boring after a while, I mean I wouldn't be able to study more than an hour in a stretch. How do you guys do it?" asked Okitani.

"It's about passion and determination. If you love what you do then you wouldn't get bored of it. I myself would like to become a botanist. So I don't mind spending hours on learning about new species of plants everyday." Makida joined the conversation.

"That's cool, having the power of concentration. I can't do it even if I want to because of my ADHD and dyslexia, I barely scrape by in studies. Only thing I have going for me is my fitness." said Minami.

"Atleast you are physically fit, I am fat and not good at anything else. Sometimes I wonder how I got into this school." Ijuuin said self deprecatingly.

"Hey guys, this conversation started with what is Star Wars and now we are in a competition of proving whose the worst. You should cheer up, it's still not to late. This is the time to improve ourselves. These three will define our carriers. So how about we start by enrolling in a gym. Yesterday, while wandering I found a gym. Away from all the crowd, we all could go there every morning. We can help you guys, after all everyone should do basic physical training." I finished channelling my inner Kushida. Minami agreed whole heartedly.

"I don't know, I get demotivated after a few sessions and waking up early everyday is like hell on earth." Professor hesitated.

"That's where we come in, we will drag you there if we have to." said Minami. I guess he wants to contribute to the group.

This was already shaping up to be a good friend group. Feeling of camaraderie was important between classmates if they want to stand up and fight the challenges we will be facing in future. I needed to lay down the foundation before I reveal the S system so that I will have easier time building up the class.

By the end of it, everyone agreed to go with the idea, even Miyake who was silent for the most part. Professor created a group chat with the name 'The Boys', again I didn't understand the context.

Update took a little time as my exams are going on, but I am here with a chapter.

Next up the actual club fair.

It will be released within the span of 12 hours. Once the exams are done updates will be a lot more regular.

This is a start of a beautiful friend group.

The boys in class D rarely get some spotlight in the novels or in fanfiction.

But I want to focus on characters before moving on the plot. As you can notice, I have given them some characteristics which will come into play later.

I will be including most of class D students at some point. Although it's a big ensemble, I hope I can do justice to each of them.

Hope the dialogue between the characters was not cringy, as I said when it comes to conversation, I am still a novice.

Anyway that's all for now

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-7 The Angel from Heaven

Reads: 2417 | Votes: 89 | Comments: 13

Upon entering the gymnasium, we received pamphlets containing information about all the clubs. The whole place was converted into a function hall with lightings and a main stage. Every club had their own stall. The variety of clubs were unreal and the level of operation was in a different level itself. Clearly they receive a lot of funding from the school. Most of the students assembled were freshmen.

"Whoa, the equipments here will put professional kits to shame." Miyake said.

"Is that Hinata Nakamura! he was runner up in all Japan junior tennis tournament." exclaimed Minami. Clearly he knows a lot about sports happenings.

"Not only him but many of the senior club members are famous throughout the nation." Okitani noticed.

"I mean this school is all about Japan's best, so it's only natural I guess." said Professor.

"What clubs are you guys joining?" asked Okitani.

"I think I might join the archery club." replied Miyake.

"I don't think I will join any athletic club. It's a waste of time, unless you are really interested in learning the activity or you are already a professional. Especially for the first years. Even if they managed to break in, they still might be a benchwarmer forever." said Yukimura. Most of the group agreed with him.

"I think I might have joined track and field but your reasoning is

correct. It may very well be a waste of time." said Minami.

"Even though I agree with Yukimura, I think it's still beneficial to join the clubs. There might be some rewards for joining which may be revealed later. I don't have any proof but it's a gut feeling and it's not even compulsory to attend everyday, see on the second page of the pamphlet. Beginners would be welcomed as well. The more members a club has, the more money they receive from the school. That's how they're able to get better training equipment." I said.

"I mean just for the sake of it, I may join the robotics club. Sounds interesting, who knows maybe I will learn a thing or two." Yukimura said.

"I don't know about you guys, but I am definitely joining anime club." said professor.

As we were talking a girl of average height with purple hair that is tied in two buns with bangs hanging over her eyebrows and peach-brown eyes took the main stage.

"Thank you all for waiting, first-year students. We will now begin the club fair. A representative from each club will explain their function. My name is Tachibana, the student council secretary and the club fair's organizer. It's nice to meet you all."

After Tachibana delivered the opening remarks, representatives from each club quickly lined up on a stage. It was quite a diverse crowd. The club representatives included everything from burly athletes in judo uniforms to students dressed in beautiful kimonos.

A girl dressed in archery gear stepped onto the stage. "Hello, my name is Hashigaki, the captain of the archery club. Many students may be under the impression that archery is an old-fashioned, simple activity, but it is actually a fun and rewarding sport. We welcome beginners with open arms. If you're interested, please consider joining."

"Hey look, the captain of the archery club is hot. I bet that increased your motivation for joining Miyake." Okitani teased Miyake. He was definitely the teaser of the group.

"What! No I am joining because I am interested in archery, not in girls." said Miyake. He was telling the truth. Okitani gave up.

After this we decided to split up and meet half an hour later at the entrance and go to one of the café at the mall.

Every time one club finished and the next sprang up, the first-year students talked among themselves about what they thought. I noticed that the gymnasium's atmosphere was rather lively. Each club's representatives, including their supervising instructors, continued to explain their organizations to the unruly first-year students without a hint of displeasure. Perhaps they were just that desperate for more members, even if their ranks only increased by one.

I definitely wanted to join a club as I was sure there was some benefits to it. From my limited experience in this school, I know that they do everything for a reason. As the introductions was going on, I searched for a club where I can go to get some peace when needed . Book club was the front runner, there stall was a simple one compared to others. There was only one girl standing in front of it. She had mid-back length silver hair that had black ribbons tied behind it. She also possessed light purplish eyes. She looked like an angel.

As I reached the stall, a guy with dark brown hair and horn rimmed glasses introduced himself.

"Hello there, I am Isamu Tanaka of class 3 B, the incharge of the book club. Are you interested in joining?" he asked.

"Yes, I am but is there any rewards for joining a club?"

He was surprised by my question, but he quickly composed himself.

"There is but I do not have the permission to disclose the information." he answered. So there is definitely something beneficial.

"If we join a club, can we leave it at a later date? Or join a club at a later date? Or join two clubs at once? " I attacked him with a

barrage of questions, trying to make him slip up.

"You ask a lot of questions, don't you. I assume you are from Class A." He slipped.

"No, actually I am from class D. But any particular reason for you to assume that I am from Class A?" I asked suspiciously. Even though I had already figured out the system on the first day, it still good to get confirmation. Also the look on the faces of the seniors when they realize what they have said was amusing too. But by their reactions, it can be derived that school definitely deals out punishment to those who knowingly reveal the S system to juniors. An interesting information.

"No, there is not. As for the answers of your questions. Yes, you can leave a club after some time if you are not interested by notifying the incharge, You can also join a club at a later date. And no, you can't join two clubs at once, unless you have the permission from both the club Incharge. So are you interested in joining or are you just fooling around, because if so don't waste my time." he finished coldly. I think I frustrated him with my questions. Understandable.

"Yes, I do want to join. What is the procedure? " He gave me a form to fill with personal information like name, class etcetera.

While all of this was happening the angelic girl was watching me with interest. It looked like she wanted to talk to me but couldn't, she seemed like a reserved person, so I tried to start the conversation.

"So, you are joining the club as well?" I asked.

"Yes, I am. Do you like to read books as well." her voice was soft and comforting. She tried to hide her excitement but failed.



"I wouldn't be joining if I didn't." I answered with a smile.

"Really, which genres do you like? "

"Mystery, philosophy or thriller. Although science fiction and fantasy will be close too."

"I hate to break up the conversation but are you both finished with the forms, if so you can submit it already." Tanaka intercepted.

We gave him the forms, he checked them and then kept it in a folder he was carrying.

"Club timings will be after classes till 6 in the evening. Library is the location, I assume you know where it is, if not follow the directions . You can come and leave anytime." he said with a monotone voice.

We left the stall and started exploring other clubs together while talking about our favorite books. It was genuinely fun to talk about your interests with a person who shares it. It also helped that she was cute and easy to talk to once you get past that stage. The club introductions were coming to an end. Until only one person remained. He was the student council president who gave a speech at the entrance ceremony. Everyone focused their attention on him.

Standing in front of the microphone, he calmly looked around at the first year students with a piercing and calculating gaze. His demeanor was different from yesterday. Gone was the welcoming person, now he was revealing his actual personality. Which piqued my interest.

He didn't say a single word. Maybe he was drawing a blank? Or perhaps he was so nervous that he couldn't speak? "Do your best!","Did you forget to bring your notecards?","Ha ha ha ha ha!".The first-year students hurled comments at him and by the first years I mean students of Class D, I felt shamed by their actions . However, he stood on the stage calmly, without trembling. The laughter and comments didn't seem to faze him. When the laughter had reached acrescendo, it suddenly died. He wore an apathetic expression."What's with this guy?" remarked an astonished student. The gymnasium buzzed with people talking, yet the boy on the stage still did not move. He simply stood there, quiet and motionless, staring fixedly at the crowd. Even Hiyori, who by the way asked me to call her that was confused .The relaxed atmosphere gradually changed, and things took an unexpected turn. It was as if some chemical reaction had taken place. An unbelievably tense, quiet mood gripped the entire gymnasium. Even though no orders had been given, the silence was so terrible that it

seemed to have gagged everyone. Not a single student looked able to open his or her mouth. In the crowd I noticed my neighbor girl, whose name I still didn't know looking at him with a pale face, which I thought was interesting. The silence continued for about thirty seconds or so...

Then, the student started his speech, slowly scanning the crowd. "I'm the student council president. My name is Horikita Manabu," he said.

"The student council is looking to recruit potential candidates among the first-year students to replace the graduating third years. Although no special qualifications are required for candidacy, we humbly ask that those considering application not be involved in other club activities. We generally do not accept students involved elsewhere. "He spoke in a soft tone, but the tension around us was so thick it felt like you could cut it with a knife. He had managed to silence over a hundred new students in that spacious gymnasium. Of course, it wasn't his position as student council president that granted him this deference. That was simply Horikita Manabu's power. His presence dominated everyone around him.

"Furthermore, we in the student council do not wish to appoint anyone who possesses a naive outlook. Not only would such a person not be elected, he or she would sully the sanctity of this school. It is the student council's right and duty to enforce and amend the rules, but the school expects more than that. We gladly welcome those of you who understand this." He didn't pause even once during his eloquent speech. Immediately after finishing, he hopped off the stage and left the gymnasium. None of the first-year students could utter a single word as we watched him go. We didn't know what would've happened if we'd tried to talk. Everyone in the room shared the same thought, apparently.

"Thank you all for coming. The club fair has ended. We will now be opening the reception area to anyone interested in signing up. Also, registration will be open until the end of April, so if any student wishes to join at a later date, we ask that you please bring the application form directly to the club you wish to join." Thanks to the laid-back organizer, the tension in the air dissipated. Afterward, the third-year students who'd introduced their respective clubs

started taking applications. It seems the book club was the only exception as we were allowed to submit ours already.

Joining the council would definitely help me in the future, but for now I will let that subject rest.

As promised, here is another chapter.

This was a big one with the entry of a major character. I wanted to introduce Hiyori early. She is definitely one of my favorite characters from the novel.

These couple of chapters took a lot of time but I think it was worth it.

Next chapter will be the infamous
"Good morning, Yamauchi!","Good morning, Ike!"

At this point I just want to finish the first volume as soon as possible. So that the class competitions may start. But I also need to set up the characters. Already many new faces got introduced who didn't even have a line in the LN.

Hope my writing is getting better.

If you have any suggestions, feel free to comment.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-8 The Pledge

Reads: 2367 | Votes: 97 | Comments: 50

"Every great magic trick consists of three parts or acts."

"The first part is called "The Pledge". The magician shows you something ordinary: a deck of cards, a bird or a man. He shows you this object. Perhaps he asks you to inspect it to see if it is indeed real, unaltered, normal. But of course... it probably isn't."

- The Prestige

"Good morning, Yamauchi!"

"Good morning, Ike!"

Arriving to class, Ike wore a broad grin as he called out to Yamauchi. It was rather unusual for them to get here so early. It'd been one week since the entrance ceremony, and Ike and Yamauchi would always make it to class right before the bell rang.

In this one week I had made a lot of progress, I had started interacting with Kushida's group. Surprisingly Kushida was the one who invited me to ask if I knew anything about Horikita. Which surprisingly was the name of my neighbor. It explained a lot about her actions in the club fair but I was still surprised. After letting Kushida down due to my lack of information on Horikita, she still invites me to their hangouts.

I was also frequently interacting with Karuizawa's group. Often eating lunch with them at the cafeteria. Although I ate from my bento, which I prepared with my newly learned cooking skills, all thanks to Chiaki. For all it's worth, she is a patient teacher.

The Boys group was successful, within a week the group's member

toll was 11 with the addition of Hirata, Onizuka and Kikuchi. We met early in the morning at 5 am for workout and often hang out at the Game zone at the Keyaki mall.

"Whew, man! I was looking forward to today so much that I barely slept last night!"

"Ah ha ha! This school is just the best! I can't believe that it's almost time for swimming! And when I say swimming, I mean girls. And when I say girls, I mean girls in school swimsuits!"

I forgot this was going on in the background.

"Hey, Ayanokouji!" Yamauchi called my name. When I looked at him , I saw him beaming at me.

"What is it?" I asked trying to hide my annoyance.

As I approached them, I could hear Ike expressing his doubts about including me in the some plan.

"Don't worry, we are not including him in the plan. It is only known to you, me, Professor, Sudo, Hondo and Miyamoto. We will only include him in the bet." he whispered. Before Ike could protest any further he talked to me.

"To tell you the truth, we're taking bets on the girl's chest sizes."

"We've come up with some probabilities." The Professor took out a tablet and opened a spreadsheet. The names of all the girls in our class were displayed. There were numbers listed as well. I honestly had no interest in gambling, but I couldn't let this opportunity go to waste.

"Umm. So, is it okay if I join you?" I asked.

"Yeah! Come on, do it. Do it!" clearly he didn't expect the golden boy of the class to participate in his degeneracy.

As of right now, Hasebe was the likeliest contender for the biggest breasts in the class. The odds sat at one to eight. If I remember correctly she is one of the inactive member of Kushida's group. She

rarely comes to karaoke evenings and prefer keeping to herself. Even though we didn't interact much, I still felt disgusted by the action of these debauched individuals.

"This is way more elaborate than I would have thought. Aren't youobserving them a little too closely?"

"Come on. We're men, aren't we? Men have only two things constantly on their minds: tits and ass!"

What kind of stereotyping is that? Because of these kind of specimens. The whole gender is labeled as perverts.

"So, what's your wager? It's 1000 points to join."

"I see..."

"Come on, play with us. It's no fun if there are only a few people betting, you know?"

"I'll do it!" said Onizuka.

"Me too, me too!" joined Kikuchi.

"I have experience scouting girls and checking out their tits!" said Ijuuin.

While I considered the offer, members of 'The boys' group crawled out of the woodwork around me, getting blatantly excited over the size of the girl's breasts.

"That's the spirit. By the way, my money's on Sakura," Yamauchi chimed in. Sakura was a somewhat plain girl who wore glasses, but because I'd barely talked to her , I honestly didn't know that much about her. While it looked like he was pondering something, Yamauchi tapped the Professor and Ike on the shoulders and whispered something to them.

"I'm only telling you guys about this. The truth is, I actually confessed to Sakura."

"What?! S-seriously?!" Ike was the most surprised and flustered by

this. Yeah, right and I nearly killed a trained assassin with a baton at the age of 8.

"Yeah, seriously. But keep this on the down low. It's just between us, okay? I mean, I thought she was really plain at first, but then I saw her wearing regular clothes. She was huge, man."

"You doofus. If she's not cute, you shouldn't ask her out, even if she's got huge tits. I wouldn't date anyone unless they were in the same league as Kushida or Hasebe. I'm not interested in such a Plain Jane." He spoke harshly because no one else was around.

I wondered how much delusional Yamauchi can be. When he said that he'd asked Sakura out. Did he really think anybody with more than one brain cell would believe him. I had my doubts. In the end, I decided to place my bet on the girl with the highest odds.

"All right! The pool!"

After lunch had ended, it was finally time for swim class. Finally, the moment Ike and the others had so desperately been waiting for. Without eventrying to hide his excitement, Ike leapt up and headed with the others toward the indoor pool.

Upon entering the locker room, Sudou promptly removed his uniform and started to change, showing off his physique. He'd built up his body through his years of basketball playing. Even in comparison with the other students, he was clearly in incredible shape. While the others wrapped themselves in bath towels, Sudou unabashedly wore only his underwear. He stood there, semi-nude, and took his swimsuit out of his bag. I couldn't keep myself from blurting something out.

"Sodou, I get it, you want to show of your body but seriously wrong crowd."

Sodou's face became the same color as his hair with anger. But before he could do anything, Ike and Yamauchi called him to discuss about their plan. A moment later, they left the locker room. We quickly finished changing as well.

Upon seeing the Olympic size pool, Ike cried out, "Whoa, this is the biggest pool I have seen in my entire life."

The water was clear and beautiful, and because it was indoors, we didn't have to worry about the weather. The perfect environment.

"What about the girls? Aren't they here yet?"

Ike looked around, sniffing the air like a dog.

"They take a while to change, so they're probably not ready." said Okitani.

Five minutes had gone by and neither the girls had come out of the locker room nor any teacher had arrived.

Yamauchi started to get impatient and asked Ike, "Why are they taking so long, our plans will be ruined. Is professor in his position?"

"Hey, should we go and check in the girls locker room?" said an impatient looking Makida.

"I don't know, isn't it kinda risky." replied Minami.

"Yes, but the rewards are good too. If the girls are taking this long then clearly they are busy doing something else. If one is lucky enough, they might see the girls totally nude. But again only the best can sneak in, check out the girls and come out without getting caught." said Yukimura.

"But, is there someone here, who is man enough to do this." said Ijuuin.

Hearing this Ike and Yamauchi had an excited glint in their eyes. They whispered something about screw the plan, we will see the real thing.

"Don't worry guys, we will be the representative of the manly club. We will go in and come out uncaught and tell you guys the tale of our adventures." declared Yamauchi.

"Hey, I have an idea. Why don't you guys take a picture with your phone and show us later." advised Minami.

"Great idea, don't worry I will go and watch the entrance. I will alert you guys if the teacher arrives." said Makida. This removed any doubts from their mind as they saw all the boys helping them.

"Let's enter the girls locker room and take their naked pics. Let's do it Ike."

"Yeah, let's do it. For big tits and ass." shouted Ike.

They brought out their phone that they had kept in their lockers. Switched on the camera and started towards the girls locker room.

They slowly opened the door and entered. It was empty in the front side. So they assumed most of them would be towards the back. As they went to the second row, the girls were present but they were fully dressed and looking at them with disgust.

Chiaki was recording the whole thing and at that moment the teacher arrived too. Accompanying him were Makida and Miyake. We were already in the locker room, tailing Ike and Yamauchi.

"Sir, these pathetic guys entered the locker room without permission and were trying to take our pictures. We caught them red handed. We also have proof." Karuizawa said pointing towards the recording.

"What! No we didn't do such thing. You guys didn't come out for a long time so we were worried and came here to check if everything was okay." Ike defended weakly.

"Actually no, you guys were planning on entering the locker room and take pictures of girls. I have the recording." Okitani played an audio clip where they were clearly discussing about entering the locker room and shouting about big tits and ass.

Ike and Yamauchi looked at him with betrayal.

"This is a serious offence, if a complaint is submitted by the girls then they could be expelled, or in worse case scenario

imprisonment." the teacher said.

Ike and Yamauchi were on the verge of crying.

"What Ike and Yamauchi did was wrong, but they shouldn't be expelled for it." said Kushida coming to their defense.

" I think expulsion would be too much but what about getting permanent ban from any swimming pool in the school premise? And 10 round of the whole school campus." I said. The girls quickly agreed. Honestly for a person with a physique like them, expulsion would be better as 10 laps of the school campus would kill them. But I guess they were brave or they loved the school too much, as they chose my punishment.

"Even though I would have reported this to the school, but it falls in the hands of students to settle their disputes. So, hereby I declare that Ike Kanji and Yamauchi Haruki will be permanently banned from entering the indoor swimming pool or any other swimming pool in the school premise. Now you may go and complete the second part of your punishment. Keep in mind that there are security cameras that will keep an eye on you. If you didn't complete all 10 laps, you would have to restart again. Is that understood?" said the teacher.

Both of them nodded.

"Now rest of the boys leave the girls locker room immediately, this is the only time you are allowed. If any of you try to enter again, you will share their fate."

"Yamauchi and Ike, don't forget we still have the recording and we knew what you were planning, you were going to secretly record us in our swimsuit with the help of Sotomura and were betting on our sizes. If you try to plan something like this again, we will know and we won't hesitate to submit this recording to the school." said Chiaki sternly.

"But how did you know?"

"One of your friends, who was decent enough told us about your

plan. Now we won't name them, as a gratitude for helping us."

"Somebody betrayed us. Who? Who did it? Was it you Sodou?" cried Yamauchi.

Sudou who till now was just silently watching, said with indignation "What, I already told you at the start, I didn't wanted to do anything with this but I still went along as you guys are my friends but the first person you suspect is me. If there was no teacher around I would have busted both of your heads."

Seeing Sudou angry, They were smart enough to escape while there was still some time left. We too left the girls locker room and moved towards the pool. Soon all the girls started coming out, well not all as there were some went and sat at the second floor observation deck.

As they came out, they started to surround me.

"Thank you so much, Ayanokouji-kun without you we would have been exposed to the eyes of those human garbage."

"Yes, Ayanokouji-kun you are so great. You are the best."

"It was nothing, the other boys helped as well." I said humbly.

"Ayanokouji-kun, you are so hot." That came out of nowhere.

"Ayanokouji-kun, how do you have a body like that.", how did the topic suddenly changed to my body.

The girls started to ogle me. They were just talking about how Yamauchi and Ike were degenerates to ogle them and now this.

Thankfully, Chiaki came to my rescue.

"Guys would you not to that, you are making him uncomfortable."

"Of course, Matsushita-san we wouldn't dare to check out your boyfriends hot body."

I am right here, you know. It seems that me regularly visiting

Chiaki's room for learning cooking has sparked some rumors.

"What! No I wasn't saying that. And stop speculating that Kiyotaka and I are dating, Mori-san." said Chiaki with a red face.

"But you guys are childhood friends, call each other by first names and Ayanokouji-kun visits you in your room alone. These facts points towards that something is going on between you and Ayanokouji-kun." Mori said trying to corner Chiaki.

It seems we are jumping topics today. But it did provide me with an opening as most of the girls were focusing on Chiaki's interrogation. I escaped from their clutches but Chiaki noticed and looked at me with betrayal.

But little did I know, when I reached the boys they started to tease me too.

The teacher arrived again after escorting Ike and Yamauchi to their fate. He was macho-looking middle-aged man, the kind of guy who apparently devoted himself to sports, gathered everyone together and started the class. He looked like a PE teacher, but also seemed like the kind of guy who was attractive to men and women alike. Seeing majority of the class present, he was satisfied.

"After you warm up, I want to see what you can really do. Swim for me," the coach said.

"Excuse me, sir. I can't really swim, though..." Ijuuin sheepishly raised his hand and spoke up.

"Since you have me as your teacher, you'll be swimming by summer time. Don't worry about a thing."

"Well, we don't really need to force ourselves to swim, do we? It's notlike we're going to the beach or anything. I mean other than the artificial beach at the north quadrant."

"No way. I don't mind at all if you're bad at swimming now, but I'll make sure you guys are winners in the end. Besides, being able to swim will definitely come in handy later in life. Definitely."

Swimming would definitely come in handy? Well, I suppose knowing how to swim would be convenient. However, hearing a teacher at this school say something like that was worth noting. Though, he could also be that he just wanted to keep the students from sinking like rocks. Everyone started their warm-up exercises. The girls trying to take a peek at me and Hirata.

The teacher asked us to swim for about fifty meters. Students who could not swim were allowed to touch the bottom of the pool with their feet. I hadn't been in a pool since last summer. The water must have been temperature controlled, because I didn't feel chilled when I entered and adjusted rightaway. After getting in, I started to swim lightly.

After fifty meters, I waited for everyone else to finish.

"He he he, that was an easy win for me. Did you all see my superswimming skills?" Miyamoto cried. He'd swum expertly, and now got out of the pool with a smug, self satisfied grin. It seems the clowns are gone but they left the circus behind .

"Well, it looks like everyone can swim, for the most part."

"Of course, sir. Back in junior high, people called me 'the flying fish' you know." Miyamoto you are becoming second Ike.

"I see. In that case, I'll have you start competing against each other.We'll separate groups by gender. Fifty-meter freestyle."

"C-compete?! Are you serious?" the clown cried.

"I'll give out a special bonus to the first-place winner: 5000 points. The student who comes in last place, however, will have to take supplementary lessons. Get ready."

The skilled swimmers cheered with joy, while the less confident students groaned.

"Because we have almost similar amount of girls and boys, I'll split both girls and boys into six groups of five people. The winner of each group will move on to a final round. Now three groups of boys and three groups of girls are... " he started to group the students.

"I'd never imagined that the school would award points as a prize. Perhaps this was a way to light a fire under the students. Rather well thought out, I would say." said Yukimura.

Excluding the observers, Ike and Yamauchi and Ijuuin who couldn't swim, there were fifteen boys and fifteen girls competing. The girls started first, while the boys sat on the sidelines, filled with excitement as they cheered. The first group contained Azuma, Ishikura, Inogashira, Maezono and Kushida. It was an easy victory for her as others were not athletic.

As the race was going on Horikita, who is in the last group came to me.



"What was all that about, the girls were saying you made a plan about trapping Ike and Yamauchi?" Horikita asked.

"The first time we talk and you ask me that. No hi or hello, my name is Horikita or something." I said teasingly.

"I don't waste time on pleasantry, now answer already."

As much as I would have liked to ignore this demanding bitc... , unfortunately she is my classmate and even though her nature is the worst, she is academically capable. That much I have noticed during the classes.

"It all started when The Professor ca-"

"Who is this Professor?"

"Seriously? When Sotomura came to me and told that Ike and Yamauchi had approached him to record the girls in secret, as he is the only one in their friend group who can handle technology. So I being a gentleman informed the girls about this and told them to wait inside the locker room. We will encourage Ike and Yamauchi to enter the room and record it and thus trapping them. It was a simple plan really, nothing too complex." I finished explaining. Before she could ask any further questions, I dipped.

The competition was ongoing and the second group was dominated by Onodera while the third group was getting ready. I thought about what actually happened.

The explanation I gave Horikita was barely scratching the surface of my motive for doing this. When Professor came to me, I saw an opportunity to experiment on how the class would work under me and it went perfect. Even though this experiment will cost us a lot of points, as the teacher would report this to the school. But now not only the girls trust me and willingly follow me but I also increased there trust on the boys in our group, by being involved in flushing out the perverts. Which would exponentially decrease the chances of a fight breaking out between the boys and the girls. Although I did had to sacrifice Ike and Yamauchi for it. And it's not like that came without it's benefits. I purposefully instructed Chiaki to reveal the information that they were betrayed by someone they trust and not reveal there name. Now they would be paranoid about who is the traitor which would prevent them from making any more plans like these which could hurt our class seriously. The recording of Ike and Yamauchi would keep them in check and make them easily controllable. About the teacher coming late and agreeing to what I said, I had paid him in advance with points. Which further solidifies my theory of buying anything, even

instructing teachers as long as it didn't hurt anybody. First week of the first-year barely passed and the whole class was working efficiently under me. A satisfactory outcome. I guess next week will be the perfect time to reveal the S system. The stage is set and the show is about to begin.

While I was doing my monologue, girls group were already finished with Chiaki beating Horikita by 0.12 seconds. Horikita had a expression of displeasure in her face. But seeing that her time was better than the winner of first group coach gave her a wildcard entry to the final round.

As the final round of the girls begin, bets were made by the boys. This time on who would win rather than their breast sizes.

Even though Chiaki was capable my money was on Onodera, looking at her form and because she had joined the swimming club it was a no brainer.

My prediction stood correct when she won with a considerable margin. Her time recorded was 26.31 seconds with Chiaki coming in second at 27.52 seconds followed by Horikita and Kushida. Even though Kushida came last the girls and boys were cheering for her.

With this the first boys group took there position. It consisted of Sodou, Minami, Hondou and Makida. It was a close affair between Sodou and Minami, both of them were athletic but Sodou took first place. He started boasting of how he couldn't wait to beat us and show us our place.

Second group consisted of the fan favorite Hirata, Kouenji, Miyake, Miyamoto and Kikuchi. This was a packed group. Hirata was good at everything, Miyake was athletic, Miyamoto for all his clowning was still a capable swimmer and Kikuchi was not bad either. The unknown variable was Kouenji, he clearly looked capable enough to win but he was heavily built which would work against him.

He put on a refreshing smile and then planted his feet by the starting line.

"Hey. Uh, why is Kouenji wearing a speedo?"

"Wh-what?"

Although the school allowed such tight swimwear, Kouenji was the only one in our class wearing it. The briefs drew attention to his crotch, and the girls all looked away.

As the signal was given, the girls started cheering for Hirata, but Kouenji surprised us all taking first place that too by a long margin.

"My abdominal muscles, back muscles, and psoas major muscle seemto be in good shape, as usual. Not a bad performance, although it looks like you peasants weren't worth wasting my energy. I expected more challenge for the perfect existence in a school like this." he finished his boasting and started his daily routine of admiring himself. The girls were glaring daggers at him for insulting Hirata.

"Hirata-kun, you were so cool! You're not just good at soccer, you're really good at swimming!" one girl cried. Even though he came second, he was still better than average.

"You think so? Thank you!" he said.

"Hey, why are you ogling Hirata-kun like that?" another girl said.

"Huh? I'm ogling?!"

There was an indignant squeal .

"Come on, girls, knock it off. Please don't fight over me. I belong to everyone. I want to be everyone's friend. Besides, what if someone who's better at swimming comes along?"Kouenji mistakenly seemed to assume that the cheers were for him.

"Kouenji, would you consider joining the swim team. You could easily win national level competition." said the coach.

"I have no interest in participating in a competition where I know I will win." replied Kouenji. In a way, I agree. There is nothing exciting about competing when there is no competition.

The third group which included me were next.

"Kya!"

A girl let out a joyful scream as I took my starting position.

It was the easiest group consisting of Okitani, Onizuka, Yukimura and Sotomura . I was expected of getting first place by the girls and I didn't disappoint them. Although my time was more than Sodou and Kouenji.

"I'm fired up!" Sudou didn't want to lose, so his competitive spirit flared. To be honest, Sudou was the only one who had any chance of winning against Kouenji. The final round was more like a one-on-one match between the two of them.

"I'm really looking forward to this. Both Kouenji-kun and Sudou-kun are so fast." Kushida said.

"I'm going to blow you out of the water. I'll use all of my power," Sodou tried to trash talk with Kouenji.

"Don't worry red-haired boy, I have no need to waste my perfect breath on someone like you." replied Kouenji.

Sodou growled with irritation.

The boys bet on Kouenji who had the best time in the class at 21.93 seconds while the girls bets were on me. Even though I had the worst time amongst the final three.

The coach blew the whistle, we jumped into the water. Miraculously I was in the lead and finished the race first with the time of 21.02 seconds. Kouenji came in second at 21.61 which was better than his previous race. Sodou came in last at 25 seconds. His expression was priceless. He was not the only one who was surprised by the results. Kouenji who till starting of the race had a smug expression was looking at me with interest and a hint of respect.

"You beat the perfect existence this time, Ayanokouji-boy, but don't think I will go easy on you next time. Until then adieu." saying this he left without a care in the world.

The girls, once again started flocking towards me. Karuizawa and company praising my looks, Kushida and her group of shy people, congratulating me. Even the boys were patting my back and asking for a treat with those 5000 points. I couldn't deny them that especially after they helped me in my plan. Although the girls were dissapointed that I was not gonna spend time with them.

The coach completed the point transfer and invited me to join the swim team, which I politely declined.

And after a enjoyable evening with the boys, a fruitful day finally came to an end.

Sheesh!

Finished the longest chapter I have written yet. Almost 4.6k words.

This one was a rollercoaster, planning and writing this took almost 10 hours. Although I took sufficient breaks.

It will be some time before the next chapter as I am exhausted.

Hopefully, you like the chapter.

I am too tired to even write this.

So that's all for now folks.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-9 The One Stop

Reads: 2247 | Votes: 95 | Comments: 42

It had been three weeks, since the entrance ceremony and I bought a shop. I know it sounds abrupt.

After figuring out the S system, the biggest challenge was to have a stable flow of points. The easiest way to fix that was to generate from another source. At first, my plan was to invest in a well established business but that idea went to the dumpster. The minimum investment in a big cafe or store was well beyond what I had. Plus the return was not that good.

So, the next best thing was to start from the scratch.

Last few weeks, I had been building excellent relations with most of our classmates, giving subtle hints about how the school works, but being the defects they are didn't understand a thing. There were exceptions like Hirata, Yukimura and some girls from Kushida's group but they too didn't think much about it.

But on the other hand, I was already making moves for the success of my store.

To gather the initial investment required to open a large business was a lot. To gather the points, either I had to resort to extorting points from a wealthy senior. Which has its own issues. You need a good blackmail material for extortion of large sum, which was time consuming and there is a lot of physical evidence left in the process, if a large sum of points was credited in my account (which I am sure is monitored by the school) and somebody reported me, I would be a sitting duck.

So, I came up with a better plan. Since the second day of the school, I was building a program with The professor that could breach the security of the school's database and extract every possible

information about the students, their like or dislikes, what they like to buy, what do they spend at and will prepare an infected mail that will contain a virus. Once the program is in, it would steal all their real points and show them a fake number of points.

The stolen points will automatically be then spread over many dormant accounts to prevent detection. Only I will have the access to the accounts.

This required complex programming, and consumes a lot of time, no highschooler without prior knowledge of advanced programming language could have done it. I created it in two days, it's been working since. I have already amassed a whopping 165 millions.

Although this wouldn't be sustainable for the long run. Soon the students will notice that the fake points shown to them are non usable. So using these points for necessary investment was a must.

The idea of the business was very simple, the all in one store at the mall, that sells used products at low prices was already going out of business. Due to being almost hidden because of a small entrance and being at the bottom most basement. Nobody knew that it even existed. Selling used or damaged products didn't help either. So I made a deal with them and bought their whole stock. Which also included buying anything they receive from the third year.

But not only that with the help of the Professor, we created a website where people can sell there used products in exchange for points. Although the price they would get would be very low. We made a whole supply line with the help of the workers whose job is to clean the dorm room when the third year student graduates. They would bring all the leftovers from the senior dorms.

We bought a grand on sale property near the dorms and renovated it heavily. Then we hired the best repairs guys, tailors, electricians, carpenters, welders and every there type of workers in the campus. Most of them were already working in stores at the mall. But because of the more lucrative offer, they agreed.

The store in itself will basically be the same all in one store, but at a better location and sells products as good as new.

It took a lot of work to do all of this. Notable thing is that, I wasn't doing all of this physically. I poached the manager of Yodobashi Akiba, the biggest store in the school campus, with a salary which was not offered anywhere. He was the one who was doing the physical work as the proxy owner of the store under my commands.

Maybe from the next month, the class competitions will be starting so I didn't want to reveal myself as the owner as it would hurt the sales. Other classes would boycott the store and I am pretty sure, the seniors too wouldn't want to give points to a junior.

Main expense was the property which was worth 87 million points. It was the best property available . Buying the wholesale used products took nearly a million points and another million was used for the renovation and hiring handymen.

Even though it was one of the biggest shop in the campus, it would still be hard to compete with already established ones.

So I used a trick as old as time, the easiest way to the top is to drag down the competition. I knew I had to tarnish the reputation of my competition. So began my second phase of the plan.

During the first few days when I was busy on the programming. Chiaki was scouting potential employees under the guise of shopping with her girlfriends. She sent me a list of people who work at the target stores. There job was the delivery of heavy products, after all a highschooler cannot take a 55 inch TV or furniture on their own. So there job was to deliver them to the dorms.

I anonymously recruited them, they would bring the goods they were delivering to a location, from a route with no surveillance, where a handyman would damage the product in a way that wouldn't look like the delivery guy's fault. Then the guy would deliver the goods. The cases of defect would increase and soon people will loose their faith. I did this within the first week because that would be the time when many first year students would buy.

No-one other than Chiaki, Sotomura and me knew about this. It was a busy couple of weeks. This whole plan along with establishing

backups and contingencies, to check if everything was running smoothly and attending the classes left me mildly tired.

The results were already showing, the school forum was full of complaints and very few people visited those store anymore. On the other hand there was a lot of excitement about a new store with the name 'One Stop' was creating a buzz.

The grand scale of the store impressed many people. Everything from electronics, clothes, furnitures, gaming and sports equipments, kitchen utensils etcetera.

It's Grand Opening was scheduled for today and everyone in the campus were invited. With the appeal of free refreshments, most of my classmates were going to the opening after school. The boys group were going with Karuizawa group, the reason being Hirata not able to choose a group.

As the classes for the day ended, we gathered around to leave together. But before we could leave, Kushida and her group joined us as well. It was a crowd of 27 people.

As we were walking towards the place, I saw Kushida trying to have a conversation with Horikita, who surprisingly joined us. Although she doesn't seem to have a lot of success.

Meanwhile, Karuizawa was walking by my side. This was becoming a common occurrence nowadays.

"Satou-san, what do you think they will sell at the store, it would be really hard to control myself if they are selling latest collection of clothes. I have already spent most of my points. Sigh, only if someone here could buy me some." Karuizawa finished by looking at me.

"You do understand that the whole purpose of the store is to sell at a cheap price." Keisei said condescendingly.

"Oh shut up, you think you are smarter than us, don't you? You are wrong both Ayanokouji-kun and Hirata-kun are smarter than you." Karuizawa said. She suddenly became defensive, although for a

moment she had an unreadable expression on her face.

"I never said that, you should stop assuming what others think, you come of as a rude individual."

"Oh yeah, and you think you are not being rude right now, Ayanokouji-kun please tell him to stop annoying me." she looked at me with a cute face.

"If you ask my opinion, this whole argument was dumb. First of all Keisei, you should be more mature, starting an argument over something so irrelevant and Karuizawa, your defense didn't make any sense at all, you were constantly trying to drag me and Hirata into this. So, both of you just stop this nonsense already." I said with a commanding voice.

They both were startled by my outburst. At first I thought they would be sulking at the opposite ends of the group but surprisingly Keisei apologized to Karuizawa who at first was hesitant but after I gave her a look, she too apologized.

"Karuizawa-san, you are already following whatever Ayanokouji-kun is saying, are you already in love with him?" Mori said teasingly.

Personally, it was a cheap attempt but Karuizawa started blushing.

"No-no, as Ayanokoji-kun said I was wrong, so I apologized."

"If you say so, or are you saying that just because Matsushita-san is here?"

Chiaki, who was talking about something with Nishimura was alerted.

"Mori-san, I already told you that Kiyotaka and I are just childhood friends and nothing more." she replied immediately.

"Whatever you say, but Karuizawa-san if I were you then I would be wary of Matsushita-san stealing your boyfriend."

It takes a lot of talent to tease two people at once, that too in front

of the subject of the teasing, I had to give Mori that.

Soon, we reached the store, it was a three story shopping complex. With the first floor housing apparels of either sex. Second floor consisted of furnitures and other necessities for living in dormitories and the third level had every kind of electronic equipments. The store opening ceremony was already done and currently, the manager of the store was greeting all the customer at the main entrance.

He was a man in his early forties, with sandy blonde hair and eyes with green orbs. He was well dressed in a green three piece suit matching the colour of his eyes. He looked like a sincere man who took his job seriously.

As we entered the store, he greeted us with a gentle smile on his face.

"Good evening, dear children my name is Sasaki Daisuke. I am the manager and the owner of this grand place. I hope you enjoy your time at the 'One Stop'. Feel free and help yourself with some snacks at the second floor. We are here to serve you." he bowed slightly.

We greeted him and moved inwards. It was already packed with students and school staff of all ages.

"Whoa, I knew this store was big, but this is just the first floor. That owner guy must be rich. I wonder how it feels to own a business like this." Karuizawa said from beside me. Currently, she was holding my arms like couples do.



A cute girl holding my arms and exploring the store together like a normal human being, who was I to object.

After entering our group had disbanded into subgroups, Makida and some boys heading straight to the second floor for the free food. Honestly I would like to join them as well but I have my reasons. Kushida and group going towards the lifestyle section, Professor and boys going to the third floor for the gaming consoles. I don't know about Horikita but pretty sure she was getting dragged by Kushida. Karuizawa and company headed towards the female clothing section.

Hirata and I were dragged in too. During the next two hours, Karuizawa was busy trying on clothes and asking my opinions about it. While I was busy observing her. At first she tried a couple of clothes but when I said I would be paying she went bonkers.

Now, I wasn't very experienced in the emotional feelings section but I do understand others feelings quickly. Karuizawa was a mystery that I wanted to solve in this 2 hours.

At first sight, she may come off as a typical Gyaru type. She was a bitch to everybody other than her friends. But when I criticized her about it, she would quickly change her whole demeanor, like she wanted to please me. Some may say she likes me but that too contradicts with her behavior a few weeks ago, when she was sticking to Hirata. I don't think anyone's feelings change that quickly unless they weren't genuine.

Another thing to notice was that when the class started to see me as their leader, only then she started to act like this.

Now, the obvious conclusion would be that she wants to be the most popular girl by dating the most popular guy, but by careful observation I found that she tends to run away or try to use other people to fight her own battles. It's like she wants to be protected and the best way to do just that is by becoming the girlfriend of the most influential guy. A symbiotic relationship. Truly fascinating.

Her acting was almost genuine. The subtle physical touches, making those eyes and her body language all would be enough to seduce any normal boy. It seems she was a lot more talented than I calculated.

After the two worth it hours, I was left regretting my decisions. The total bill went up to 17,000 points. At least she had the decency to look apologetic.

We met up with the others at the free food area. Somehow, the boys had survived the two hours by eating free food. I don't think there was a time in my life when I felt this much regret.

After enjoying the snacks, the girls left for their rooms. While we boys stayed.

"The quality here is much better than the store at the mall, If they told me that these were genuinely first hand products, I would have believed it. The lower pricing is just icing on the cake." said

Okitani.

"You will stand corrected, Okitani-dono. The branded laptop that I bought at the store in the mall was found to be defective, whereas here they sell the same laptop at low prices without any defects. They also provide a 6 month personal warranty from their side." said professor.

"But still beats me, how can they make profit, I mean this big of a store would require a lot of investment." said Makida.

"Yes, the amount of staff working here is also high." said Yukimura.

"Actually, it is the most profitable business. Yes, the amount spent on paying salary may be a lot. But it basically gets it's products for free, whereas the other business have to buy them at full price. Also look at the shear difference between the number of customers here to any other shops in the campus. Given there are more than 500 people living here. It's sales are too high. They cover for the lower pricing. I would say the monthly profits would be in ten or even hundreds of million points." I said.

"Gotta say that man down there is a genius for coming up with this idea." said Minami.

"I don't know about you guys, but I am really tired after shopping for two hours with Karuizawa, I never thought that it would be this hard." I said.

"Man, you are really lucky. Three weeks and you already have a girlfriend and I am pretty sure most of the girls in our class already have a crush on you." said Onizuka.

"Yes, Kiyotaka-sensei teach us your ways."

"If I was even half as good looking as Kiyotaka, I would have atleast landed a Shinohara. What would I not give to be you."

"Guys, I think we should leave Kiyotaka-kun alone, he is clearly getting uncomfortable." said Yosuke in my defense.

I really didn't want to comment anything on the Karuizawa

situation as I wanted to see where it would lead to.

So I said my goodbyes and left for my dorm room. On the way, I checked and found out that today's earnings were 11.2 million points. It was a respectable amount. More than the expected amount. Although the earnings would vary but by the end of the next month I would have already recovered what I invested. But I had to be careful with my earnings as any over spending would be a cause for suspicions.

The date of revelation was nearing and the class would go through a lot of changes. The next few days would be interesting.

I am back

The last few days had been pretty hectic, due to my final exams.

But I finally got the time to write. Originally I had no plan in mind with the whole 'buying a store's idea but @ Tomorrow216 and @tikjgfthj inspired me to come up with something.

I also wanted a good source of points for my plans in the future, without the whole extortion of points cliche.

Feel free to leave a review or any suggestions about this whole plan as I am not a master in programming or anything. So if you feel that there is inconsistency then please let me know.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-10 The Turn

Reads: 1978 | Votes: 86 | Comments: 36

The second act is called "The Turn". The magician takes the ordinary something and makes it do something extraordinary. Now you're looking for the secret... but you won't find it, because of course you're not really looking. You don't really want to know. You want to be fooled.

-The Prestige

"Good morning, Kiyotaka" said Okitani, entering the gym. While I was leaving.

"Hey, how are you doing? You are late today."

"I kinda overslept, I was up all night playing counter strike. Where are the others?"

"They are in the sauna, it seems today's workout a little hard for them."

"All the workout routines, you instruct us to follow are hard. If today was extra hard, then I will consider myself lucky to be absent."

"Actually, because you weren't here today, so tomorrow I will make sure to work you extra hard."

"What! No that's unfair." he cried.

"Anyway, there's still 10 minutes left, atleast do some stretching exercises for today. I will be going now. One more thing, remind the others that today is an important day. So no one should be absent." I said ignoring his protest.

I started walking towards the dorms, it was a fair distance to cover. The gym was isolated, not many people came here to exercise as people preferred the gym at the Keyaki mall. The membership fee was low and we got extra discount for joining as a group.

During my walk, I started thinking about today. 30th April, Today I am gonna reveal the S system to the class. During the conversations with other classmates, I always left a hint about the system but nobody understood it.

The whole month, people either slept in the class, used their mobile phone, came late or were absent altogether. No body paid attention to the teacher other than a select few. Everything was according to my calculations. The class would be zero or atleast close to it.

And if my predictions are correct then tomorrow we wouldn't be receiving any points. The class would start to panic as most of them have already spent most of their points.

That's why I didn't tell them anything before. When they find themselves in such a position, they will look towards a person who is smart enough to lead them.

By revealing the system today, most people will know who that person is and if someone doubts my theory, the result will be out tomorrow.

Only if I was placed in a better class, I wouldn't have to do so much work and lead a class which is full of defects to victory. But then again where's the fun in that. Because when everything is done and dusted, this class will go down as the most dominant class in the history of ANHS. That's my promise because no matter what the school throws at me, I will win. I don't care what methods I will have to use. Whoever I will have to sacrifice. The most important thing to me is my freedom and I will achieve it after graduating from Class A. The freedom from that white hell.

##################################

As I entered the classroom, I saw all the students were present. It seems the group leaders did their work.

Last few weeks, I assigned some group leaders to the major groups. Like Hirata, Kushida, Chiaki, Karuizawa, Sudo and Yukimura to name a few.

Sudo was the leader of the idiots, even though he didn't know it.

"Hello there, Ayanokouji-kun. So what is the important news you are going to announce today? Is it something related to the class or something personal." said Kushida in her usual cheerful voice.

"Nooooo, Don't tell me you are dating someone already! " said Maezono.

Hearing this the girls started whispering among themselves. Speculating about who I could be dating. Some look saddened. The idiot company were glaring daggers at me.

"No Maezono, it's not about that and I am not dating anybody."

Instantly, the girls cheered up. That's weird.

"I will do the announcement at lunch, I don't think there's enough time right now. The announcement is related to our future in this school, so I would request everybody to be present."

As I finished speaking, Chabashira-sensei walked into the noisy classroom.

Her entrance didn't alter the student's behavior.

"Quiet down a little, please. Today's lesson will be a bit serious."

"What do you mean, Sae-chan-sensei?"

asked Ike.

He already had a pet name for the teacher.

"It's the end of the month, so we're going to have a short test. Please

pass these to the back."

She handed out the papers to the students in the front row.

Eventually,

the single-sheet test reached my desk. It contained questions in the five main

subjects. With only a few questions per subject, it really was short.

"Huh? I wasn't listening, though. This is so unfair!" Yamauchi cried.

"Don't say that. This test is just for future reference. It won't be

reflected in your report cards. There is no risk involved, so don't worry. Of

course, cheating is prohibited."

Her phrasing struck me as odd. Normally, only general grades were

reflected in your report card. But the way Chabashira-sensei said they

wouldn't be reflected in our report cards made me think that the grade could

be reflected in some other way. There will be more time to think about that later.

As soon as the pop quiz began, I scanned the questions. There were

four questions per subject, for a total of twenty. Each question was worth five

points, for a total of one hundred points. Most of the questions were

extraordinarily easy, to the point where it was almost a letdown. In fact, the

questions seemed to be about two levels less difficult than the ones on the

entrance examination. It appeared far too easy.

However, just as I thought that, I reached the end of the test. The

final three questions were an order of magnitude higher in terms of difficulty. The final math problem couldn't be solved without complex formulae.

"No way. These questions are seriously way too hard..."

These questions couldn't be geared toward a first-year high school student. The final three questions were clearly of a different quality than the others, so it was possible they'd been put on the test by mistake.

Well, I guess I'll just solve these problems the same way I did on the entrance exam.

Chiyabashira-sensei monitored us. As she slowly patrolled the classroom, she kept a watchful eye to dissuade us from cheating.

I quickly glanced at Horikita, who given how she attends the classes seriously would never even think of cheating. Her pen danced across the paper as she filled in all of the answers. It looked like she was easily going to get a perfect score.

I slept during the test until the bell rang. Many people looked at me with surprise, including Sae-sensei when I submitted the answer script.

##################################

It was lunch break and most of the class was looking at me expectantly. Even Chabashira-sensei was interested. However the biggest surprise for me was that Kouenji was present too. Since the swimming competition he has grown some sort of respect for me, while he would straight up ignore the class and call them peasants, he acknowledges me. I took the stage and looked at them with a serious expression.

"I've got some bad news. Tomorrow, we won't be getting any points."

"What? What are you saying Ayanokouji-kun, don't say that." cried Shinohara.

"He has clearly lost it. We don't even need to discuss about this. The school told us that we will get 100,000 points each month." said Yamauchi.

"Did they? If I remember correctly sensei said that the points we get reflect our performance and our worth. She never said we will receive a fixed amount of points."

As I continued more and more people fell silent.

"Now I am not saying that my theory is 100% correct but hear me out. Since the first day of the school, I felt something was wrong. For a school boasting 100% employment rate, it was absurdly lenient. As I observed more, enquired with some seniors who neither denied nor agreed with me." The enquiring seniors part was a lie to make them believe me.

"Yukimura, do you remember about the hidden cameras that I told you about?"

"Yes, wait do you think, they are there to monitor us and allot points accordingly." said Yukimura.

"I am pretty sure that's the case."

"Then, why would I not get any points? I behaved perfectly and never slacked off in the class." he asked.

"That's because the school doesn't evaluates just you as an individual but as a class. My guess is there is a certain number of class points allotted every month, according to which we get our private points."

"What? That's unfair and illogical. Why shouldn't I receive points when my idiotic classmates are the one being idiotic." said Horikita, immediately grabbing the attention of our class in a bad way.

"It would explain the free section at the convenience store or the free vegetables meal set. I don't know if you guys have noticed but only the seniors who are from Class D, are found buying those." I said.

"That's not all, now I would request all of you to not get offended but I think the school sorted us in our class according to our potential and talents. For example class A consists of the best students who have bright future ahead of them. Then Class B having good students but inferior compared to Class A. Same with Class C having the third best population and lastly us, Class D. Sodou do you remember on the first day, how those seniors called us defects."

"Hey, who are you calling defective. I am easily the best student in this school." said Miyamoto.

"Ayanokouji-kun, it's rude to call your friends defectives, I understand you have a theory, but that's mean." said Kushida.

"As I said it's not me, blame the school and I am not saying that I am better than any of you, I am a part of this class too, aren't I? But if you think rationally and without any bias, we do have a lot of flaws, don't we?"
"Maybe someone had a bad past."
"Maybe someone's nature in the class is undesirable."
"Maybe someone is good in studies but bad in physical activity or vice versa."
"Maybe someone isn't good at anything at all."

As I said this I looked at Kushida, Karuizawa, Horikita, Yukimura, Sudou and Yamauchi in that order. Kushida and Karuizawa had shocked faces when I looked at them saying they had a bad past.

The whole class was pindrop silent. I didn't stop and continued.

"About the 100% employment rate, I think only the students who graduate as a Class A student can get that privilege. That's why there is a class hierarchy."

I think that was the last straw and the dam broke. Everybody started shouting and screaming. It was chaos and in the middle of it, Kouenji was enjoying himself.

"They tricked us! The school tricked us."

"How can they do that, first they promise heaven and then send us to hell."

"Is it even legal, lying for the sake of the reputation of the school."

Did they really think that this school will give them free money to spend and set there future up without them doing anything. Truly I have seen the peak of human foolishness. They don't even know how the real world works. If they think that this is hell, then who knows what will happen when they enter the outside world as an adult.

I looked towards Chabashira-sensei, she was looking at me with a mixture of surprise and hope.

"Sensei, can I meet you after school today? I have something to discuss in private." I asked.

"Yes, meet me at the staff room after the class has ended." she replied. I then turned my attention back to the class.

"Everybody, please let me speak. I am not finished yet."

"What more, are we gonna become slaves if we graduate from Class D." said Ike.

"Actually, now I am going to tell you the good news."

"Wait really, atleast there is still some good in this world."

"Yes, our class points would nearly be zero. Yes, we were labeled as defective by the school, but that doesn't mean we will accept it and sit back. Do you think you deserve to live the next three years of your life like this?" I asked loudly.

"Hell, no"
"No"
"Never"

There answered back together.

"No, we won't. We will fight and we will win."

There was a cheer of yeah's and yes. The whole atmosphere went 180. I continued

"The school deducts our points based on our performance in exams and our behavior in the school premise. Not only in the classroom, note that. From here onwards we will improve our behavior, we will attend classes regularly and pay attention. We won't get ourselves in trouble, we will study with diligence. If we do that, we already take our first step towards the top."

Fortunately everybody agreed. I expected some resistance but I guess, I underestimated them.

"But Ayanokouji-kun, how do you expect us to reach Class A with doing just that. I am not disagreeing, I really think we should improve ourselves, but if our class points is really zero. Then other classes must have a pretty good lead." said Hirata.

"That's a good question, Hirata. When I came up with this theory, I too hit a road block there. How can lower classes have any hope to surpass the superior classes. The answer I came up with was, some kind of test. These will be different from our normal exams. There content is still unknown to me but they will offer class points as a reward. Winning these will help us propel our class forward."

"So, you mean we will be competing with other classes directly to get points?" said Horikita, for the first time since that rude remark.

"Yes, I am sure of it. But don't worry about that now. I don't think they will introduce special tests this early. Our first hurdle would be our upcoming exams. So if I may have all of your permission, I would like to propose the idea of the study groups. I think we will get the results for this exam tomorrow, right?" I looked towards Sae who nodded.

"Then the students who will get the best results will lead the study groups and help the academically weaker students. I will make the groups and send the names in the class group chat."

"I'm in, if you will teach me Ayanokouji-kun. I will surely ace the test." said Karuizawa.

"Look who you are asking to teach you, in today's test he just wrote for 10 minutes and slept the entire time, he doesn't know anything. Atleast I wrote the test for 60 minutes. You would be better off studying with me." said Yamauchi proudly.

Karuizawa was disgusted, almost to the point of puking.

"Yamauchi, you write in 60 minutes because that's all you could have written whereas Kiyotaka wrote for 10 minutes because that's all he needed to ace the test." replied Chiaki.

"Really, then let's see who gets the better score tomorrow. If I win, the Matsushita-san you would have to date me." said Yamauchi, clearly seeing an opportunity to feel the touch of a woman only time in his entire lifetime.

Matsushita didn't hesitate and agreed even though there was no punishment if he lost. But I wasn't going to waste this opportunity.

"But Yamauchi, if you lose you would have to listen to every instructions fromher for the whole month."

"If I win, I get to date her and if I lose, I will be her slave. It's totally awesome. Oh, I wonder what naughty things she will order me to do. I almost want to lose now." he said that out loud.

And now I have seen peak human degeneracy. The girls had to restrict Chiaki from hitting him.

"Okay, the timings for the circus is over, Yamauchi. You can stop being a clown."

"Just you wait, I will show you tomorrow whose the real clown. What do you say guys, we will show this ikeman his real place." he said to his clownmates.

Ike, Sodou, Miyamoto and Hondou agreed with him. Maybe if they pool all their score, then they might win.

The lunch break was almost over so I took my seat again, opened my Bento and started eating. Everybody started eating there lunch as well. Karuizawa and group were to depressed as they were not

going to receive any points for the next month, so they forgot to invite me which was a relief.

After the lunch, the classes resumed but I could feel a gaze from a black haired girl beside me.

"You know it's rude to stare. If I did that, I would be labeled as a certified creep." I said without looking towards her.

"Huh, don't assume such things, Ayanokouji-kun. I wasn't staring at you."

"Whatever helps you sleep at night. Although, I didn't expect to have a conversation with the cold hearted queen of our class."

This was the first time, Horikita and I were having a conversation.

"Don't call me that unless you want to get stabbed by this."

She showed me a compass, although it wouldn't hurt much, but getting stabbed is always messy.

"Sure, go ahead. If you want to get stabbed with a knife that is. Rest assured, I won't hold back." she was surprised. I guess nobody ever talked back to her before.

"We are getting off topic, so why were you staring at me?"

"I wasn't thinking about what you said about our class being full of defectives. That may be true but I wouldn't be here. So, either the school made a mistake in placing me in this class or your theory is incorrect."

Interesting, so her flaw is her superiority complex. One might say that she is similar to Kouenji, but he can definitely back his claims. Horikita on the other side needed a reality check and I will be the one giving her that. I have no interest in showing off, but if I didn't remedy this early, it might become a problem later on.

"You saying that just shows that you are no better than the likes of Ike and Yamauchi."

"How dare you compare me to those degenerates."

"Should I not? The way you are considering yourself better. Just like Yamauchi did. So let me ask this once again, are you superior to everyone in this class."

" Yes, I am. Unlike Yamauchi, I can do what I claim."

"So, what do you claim. Choose one field where you can beat me and if I loose. I will accept that you are superior to me in front of the class."

"You are just digging your grave. Maybe you can swim fast and you are somewhat smart. But you can't compete against the likes of me. I could beat you in any exam."

"Well, then why don't we have a wager as well, just like Yamauchi and Chiaki. If I win, I get to boss you around for the whole month."

"Then get ready to be embarrassed in front of the whole class tomorrow." she finished and focused on the board.

It seems tomorrow would be an interesting day.....

Heya guys

Another chapter done, next would be the first of May. The day of revelation.

How do you feel about the bet with Horikita, although it was quite cliche, I just went with it.

The whole revelation thing was hard for me to right as I am very bad at writing conversations. Although I feel, I am improving.

For all those worrying who will be the ship.

Honestly, I even don't know myself. But there are certain banned ones. Like Kei because she will have the role of a best

friend. Not Horikita, because I have some ideas for her. Not Sae, because she will be like a mother figure for kiyo. If you choose Ichinose, then you would have to wait till the mid second year as I have plans for her character. If you choose the queen, who would be introduced soon, then I would have to work hard to come up with something. But you are free to comment any good ideas.

I want to develop Kiyo's character in the story. It will be his story of becoming a human. Although still remaining the badass he is. The transition will be slow. He wouldn't be caring for others, in the first or second month. But till the end of the first-year he would be a lot different of a person than he is now.

The first volume is on the verge of completion and I would have to read the second volume again, as I don't remember anything about it.

Talking about remembering, how do you guys like the anime season 3. I feel even though it skipped a lot of things and a boring first half, it still a solid season. Last few episodes have been peak.

On that note, that will be all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-11 The Mask

Reads: 2121 | Votes: 90 | Comments: 100

It was May 1st, everyone were in the class. We didn't receive a single point. Even though they had been made aware of that yesterday, still nobody had fully accepted that they would have to live the next month without any points. As a result, whole class were sitting silently and staring into the space.

The morning bell rang, which broke out the students from there blank stares. Soon afterwards, Chabashira-sensei strode into the room, holding a rolled up poster.

"All right, your morning homeroom is about to begin. Before we get started, does anyone have any questions? If so, now is the time to speak." Chabashira-sensei said. She appeared totally convinced that the students had questions they wanted answered.

Immediately, Hondou raised his hands."Um, I checked my point balance this morning, but I didn't see any deposits. Points are given on the first day of every month, aren't they? I couldn't buy juice this morning."



"Hondou, were you sleeping yesterday, when Ayanokoji was explaining the school system."

"That was all true, I thought it was just a way for him to improve our behavior. But then how would we live, without any points?" he started packing.

"Sensei, even though I explained it already yesterday, Can you please tell us why we didn't receive any points? For the sake of some doubters of my theory present here. I don't think they will completely understand otherwise."

"A total of ninety-eight absences and late arrivals. Three hundred ninety-one incidences of talking or using a cell phone in class. An official complaint from the swimming instructor about boys entering girls locker room without permission. That is quite afew infractions over one month. In this school, your class's results are reflected in the points that you receive. As a result, you wasted all of the100,000 points that you should have received. That's what happened."

"I should have explained this all to you on the day of the entrance ceremony. This school measures its student's true abilities. This time, you were evaluated as being worth nothing. That's all." Chabashira-sensei spoke in a robotic fashion, devoid of any emotion.

The doubts that were still lingering on the mind of my classmates, about my theory had been completely shot down by the school in the worst way possible. Even though we'd started with the huge advantage of 100,000 points, Class D had lost it in just a single month.

"Chabashira-sensei. Still, should we not have a explanation about this at the start of the previous month. I do not recall hearing you explain that to us before-"

"What? Are you incapable of understanding something unless it's explained in detail?"

"Of course. There was never any talk about reducing our points. Had that been explained beforehand, I'm sure we would have avoided being late or talking during class."

"That is a rather bizarre argument, Hirata. It is certainly true that I don't recall explaining the rules of point distribution. However, didn't you all learn in elementary school not to be late or talk in class? Was that not taught throughout your elementary and junior

high schools?"

"Well, that's-"

"I'm sure that in nine years of compulsory education, you learned that being late and talking in class are bad things. And now you say that you can't understand this because I haven't explained it to you? I'm afraid your reasoning is flimsy. If you had simply acted properly, then your points would not have dropped all the way to zero. This comes down to you taking personal responsibility."

There was no way for anyone to refute her perfectly sound argument. Everyone knew that bad behavior didn't pay.

"Having just entered your first year of high school, did you honestly think you'd receive 100,000 points every month with no strings attached? At a school established by the Japanese government for the express purposes of training gifted people? That's unthinkable. Try using some common sense.Why would you leave it to chance?"

Although Hirata appeared to be frustrated, he looked the teacher straight in the eye.

"Well then, even though Ayanokouji-kun explained the gist of it, could you at least explain in detail how points are added or deducted? We can keep that in mind for future reference."

"I cannot tell you. We cannot disclose the methods behind our student evaluation. It's the same as any other organization. When you enter a company, it is the company's choice whether or not to tell you how it evaluates its employees. However, I'm not cruel, and I'm not trying to be cold. In fact, this situation is so pathetic that I will give you one bit of guidance."

For the first time, I saw a faint sliver of a smile on Chabashirasensei's lips.

"Let's say that you stop being late to class and have no more absences... Even though zero points will be deducted from you this month, that doesn't mean that your points will increase, either. That means next month you will still receive zero points. From another

perspective, you could say no matter how times you're late or absent to class, it doesn't matter. So, you're not really at a loss, are you?"

"Tch..." Hirata's expression darkened. Her explanation was so counterproductive that it had the opposite effect; some students seemed incapable of understanding what she meant. The students who thought they could improve their situation by remedying bad behavior had their hopes dashed. Which was the opposite of what I want.

That was probably Chabashira-sensei's, or rather, this school's, intention.The bell rang, signaling the end of homeroom.

"It looks like we spent too much time yammering. I hope that you understood the gist of it. Well, it's about time that we switch to our main topic."

From the tube she carried, she removed a white rolled-up poster and spread it out. She stuck the poster to the blackboard with some magnets. The still-confused students stared blankly at the poster.

"Are these...the points for each class? That Ayanokouji-kun talked about." Horikita tentatively took a guess.

Class A through Class D were listed. To the side was a row of numbers that went up to a maximum of four digits. Class D had zero. Class C had 490. Class B had 650. And at the top was Class A, with a total of 940. In this case, 1000 points would mean 100,000 yen. Every class had apparently lost points.

"Isn't something about this odd?" Horikita asked me.

"Yeah. The numbers look too even."

"You've all been doing whatever you pleased this past month. The school has no intention of preventing you from doing what you want. Your actions, such as being late or talking during class, only affect the points you receive. The same goes for how you use your points. How you choose to spend is entirely up to you. We have not put any restrictions on point usage."

"This isn't fair, though! We can't enjoy our student lives like this!"shouted Ike, who'd stayed quiet until now.Yamauchi wailed in incredible agony. He'd already used up all of hispoints...

"Look here, morons. Every other class got points. The amount of points we gave you for the first month should be plenty for you to live on."

"B-but, how do the other classes still have points left? They didn't about this too right? That's weird..."

"I've already told you, there's nothing unfair about it. All of the classes were scored using the same rules. Despite that, they didn't lose as many as you. That's the truth." she further explained.

"In this school, students are sorted by their level of excellence. The superior students are sorted into Class A, the least capable in Class D. It's the same system you'd find in the major cram schools. In other words, Class D is akin to the last bastion for failures. You are the worst of the worst. You're defective. This is just the result of you being defective. Although, Ayanokoji predicted this, he was too late." she glared at me, like it was my fault for not coming up with my theory early.

Well it was, if I had told the class about it then due to my influence most of them would have corrected their behavior but there was a sound reasoning behind it.

"However, I have to say, this year's Class D was the first to ever spend all of their points in a single month. I am impressed by how much you indulged yourselves. You are the worst Class D in the history of the school. Wonderful, just wonderful."

I stayed silent in all of this and just observed everybody's reaction. After all Sae was doing her job perfectly.

"So, does that mean that once we reach zero points, we'll always staythere?"

"Yes. You will remain at zero until you graduate. But don't worry, you can still have a room in the dorms and free meals. You won't

die."

Although they knew that it was possible to get by with the bare minimum, a lot of students weren't comforted by that fact. After all, they had lived a life of luxury this past month. To suddenly restrain yourself after that would prove seriously difficult.

"Won't the other classes make fun of us?" Sudou kicked the legs of his desk with a loud thwack. After hearing that the classes were divided based on merit, everyone else would probably believe that Class D was full of morons. Despair wasn't unreasonable.

"What? You're still worried about your dignity, Sudou? Well then, work to make your class into the best one."

"Huh?"

"Your class's points aren't just linked to the amount of money that you receive each month. They're also indicative of your class rank. If you get up to 500 class points, then you would be promoted to Class C. As for how can you gain 500 points, I am not allowed to explain much but what Ayanokoji said yesterday was all true, so there is a way to improve your class points. At this point the only advice I can give is follow Ayanokoji, he's your only chance to reach Class A."

At this point, the whole class looked at me as their savior, even the idiots. Right now, if I ordered them to go beat up other classes to get points, they probably would.

"Now then, I have one more bit of bad news to share with you all."

She stuck another sheet of paper up on the board. It listed the names of everyone in class. A number stood next to everyone's name.

"Judging from these, I can see that we've quite a few idiots in this class." As her heels clacked against the floor, she glanced at us.

"These are the results of the short test you took yesterday. Your sensei was so happy after your excellent performance. Come on, what in the world did you all study when you were in junior high?"

With the exception of a few high scores, almost everyone tested below a sixty. Even if you ignored Sudou's wonderful score of fourteen points, there was Ike, scoring a little above him at twenty-four points and Yamauchi who had boasted yesterday about being better than me was at twenty-five points. The average score was sixty-five.

"I'm so glad. If this were an actual test, then seven of you would've had to drop out."

"D-drop out? What do you mean?"

"Oh, what, did I not explain this to you? If you fail on a midterm or final exam in this school, then you have to drop out. If we applied that rule to this test, anyone who scored below thirty-two points would be out. You guys really are stupid, aren't you?"

"Wh-what?!" wailed Ike and the other failures.There was a red line drawn on the paper, separating the seven people inquestion from the rest of the class. Among those seven people, Kikuchi had scored highest, with thirty-one points. Anyone with a score equal to or lower than Kikuchi's had failed.

"Hey, don't jerk us around, Sae-chan-sensei! Don't joke about kicking us out!"

"Frankly, I'm also at a loss," the teacher said. "These are the school rules. You should prepare for the worst."

"The teacher's right. There do seem to be a lot of morons here." Kouenji wore a smug grin while he polished his nails, his legs propped on the desk.

"What the hell, Kouenji? You scored below the red line, too!"

"Pah. Where exactly are you looking, boy? Look again."

"Huh? Kouenji is...huh?"Starting from the bottom of the page, Sudou scanned upward, and there he found Kouenji Rokosuke's name. Unbelievably, Kouenji had tied for the second spot, scoring ninety points. That meant he'd been able to solve one of those super difficult problems.

"I never thought that Sudou was an idiot like me!" cried Ike, a mixture of wonder and sarcasm in his voice.

But the real entertainment was seeing Horikita's and Yamauchi's faces. When they saw the name at the top.

"Hey look, Ayanokouji-kun scored full even though he wrote for 10 minutes. He is the smartest student in this entire school." said Karuizawa.

"I don't know about the school, but yes only he and one other student from Class A got 100 out of 100." Sae answered.

"Sensei, so was I right about the 100% employment rate applicable only to Class A?"

"Yes.This school, which operates under government supervision, boasts a high rate of advancement into elite education and workforce placement. That is a well-known fact. It's very likely that most of you have chosen a college or future workplace."

"However, nothing comes easy in this world. Mediocre people such as yourselves would have to be naive to think that you could easily get into the college or workplace of your choice." Chabashira-sensei's words carried throughout the room.

"To make your dreams of a bright future come true, your only option is to overtake Class A. This school guarantees nothing for any other students."

"Th-that's...absurd! Even though Kiyotaka explained this, it's still unacceptable." Keisei stood up. He'd tied with Kouenji for the second highest score, indicating that there were no issues with his academic abilities.

"How disgraceful. There's nothing more pitiful than men losing their cool." As if prompted by Yukimura's words, Kouenji let out a sigh.

"Don't you feel dissatisfied being in Class D, Kouenji?" Yukimura asked.

"Dissatisfied? Why would I feel dissatisfied? I don't understand."

"Because the school says we're so low that we're basically delinquents and failures. We've been told that there's no guarantee whatsoever that we'll advance into higher education or get a job!"

"Pah. Utter nonsense. That's so marvelously stupid that I can't even find the words." Kouenji didn't even stop polishing his nails or turn to face Yukimura as he spoke.

"The school simply hasn't seen my potential yet. I pride myself on being great, and I value, respect, and regard myself more highly than anyone. So, the school arbitrarily placing me into Class D means nothing. Say, for instance, that I dropped out of school-I would be perfectly fine. After all, I am 100 percent positive that the school would come crying totake me back."

That certainly sounded like something Kouenji would say. Was it being macho? Or narcissism? It's true that if you didn't care about the school's classification of students, then it really wasn't a big deal. If you considered Kouenji's impressive intellect and physical ability, it was difficult to imagine that all of the students in Class A could be better than him. Perhaps he'd been assigned to Class D because of his personality rather than his ability.

"Besides, I don't care in the slightest if the school does or doesn't assist me to higher education or the workforce. It's been decided that I will lead the Kouenji conglomerate group. Whether I'm in Class D or Class A is a trivial matter."

It was true that for a man whose future was already decided, getting into Class A was far from a necessity. Yukimura, at a loss for words, simply sat back down.

"It looks like your bubbles have been burst. If you had simply understood the harsh reality of the situation from the start, then this long homeroom period might have meant something. Your midterm exams are in three weeks. Please think things over, and be careful not to drop out. I have confidence that you can find a way to avoid getting red marks on your report cards. If at all possible, challenge yourself to act in a way befitting a skilled individual." Chabashira-sensei exited the room, closing the door with some force for added emphasis. The students marked in red were left dejected.

Even the normally proud Sudou clicked his tongue and hung his head in shame.

I left the classroom, saying that I needed to go to the washroom. In the corridor, at some distance. Sae was waiting for me.

"Your performance was really good. It had the required effect."

"It can hardly be called a performance, when I actually wanted to do that. Now I fulfilled my part, now let's see if you can do your part. "

"There's no need to worry. In the mid terms, Class D will get the highest average."

"Are you still confident about your claim after seeing the results of the test?"

"It's not a claim, it's an inevitablity." After saying that I left her there standing.

----------Flashback----------

The day before -

The school had ended for the day and I arrived at the staff room.

I looked for Chabashira-sensei all around, but I didn't find her anywhere. So, I called out to a teacher inspecting her appearance in a mirror.

"Excuse me, is Chiyabashira-sensei here?"

"Hmm? Sae-chan? Oh, she was just here a moment ago." The teacher had wavy, shoulder-length hair, which made her look mature. The way she said Chabashira-sensei's name made them sound close. They were near in age and probably friends.

"She must have stepped away for a minute. Do you want to wait here?"

"No, thank you. I'll wait in the hall." I didn't like being in the faculty

office. I had a bad feeling about her, so the hall would do just as well. However, the young teacher unexpectedly followed me.

"I'm Hoshinomiya Chie, in charge of Class B. Sae and I have been best friends since high school. That's why we call each other Sae-chan and Chie chan."

That information seemed kind of superfluous.

"Hey, why are you meeting Sae-chan after school hours? Huh? Huh? Why?" she asked.

"No idea."

"I don't understand. So you came to the faculty office without a reason? Hmm? What's your name?" An onslaught of questions. She scanned me from top to bottom, as if sizing me up.

"My name's Ayanokouji," I said.

"Ayanokouji-kun, huh? Oh, wow, that's a cool name. You're pretty popular, aren't you?" What was with this overly friendly teacher? She acted more like a student. If this were an all-boy school, she would have immediately captured every student's heart.

"Hey, do you already have a girlfriend?" she asked.

"No... I'm, uh, not especially popular." I tried to seem reluctant so that she could leave me alone, but Hoshinomiya-sensei kept pushing herself onto me. She grabbed my arms with slender, delicate hands.

"Hmm? How unexpected. If we were in the same class, I'd never leave you alone. Perhaps because you're so innocent? Or do you like playing hard to get?" She caressed my cheeks. I had no idea what to do. She'd probably stop if I licked her fingers, but I had a feeling that'd get me expelled.

"What are you doing, Hoshinomiya?" Chabashira-sensei appeared out of nowhere. With a loud thud, she smacked Hoshinomiya-sensei on the head with her clipboard. Hoshinomiya sensei crouched and gripped her skull in apparent pain.

"Ouch! What was that for?" she cried.

"For getting involved with one of my best students." she said like she was showing me off.

"I was only keeping him company while he waited for you, Sae-chan. But what do you mean by your best student?"

"It would have been better if you just left him alone. Thanks for waiting, Ayanokouji. Let's go into the office." she said, ignoring the second question.

I followed Chabashira sensei. Hoshinomiya-sensei remained by my side, smiling widely. Chabashira-sensei noticed and turned, her face much like a demon's.

"You stay," she ordered.

"Come on, don't be so cold! It won't be the end of the world if I listen, right? Besides Sae-chan, you're definitely not the type to give one-on-one guidance. Pulling a new student like Ayanokouji-kun into the guidance roomout of nowhere... Are you after something, I wonder?"

Grinning, Hoshinomiya-sensei scooted behind me and placed her hands on my shoulders. I sensed a storm brewing.

"So, Sae-chan, are you looking to be dominated by a younger man?" Dominated by a younger man? What did that mean?

"Don't say such stupid things. That wouldn't be possible."

"Hee, you're certainly right. It wouldn't be possible for you, Sae-chan," Hoshinomiya sensei muttered, her words laced with a double meaning.

"Why are you following us? This is a Class D matter."

"Huh? I can't go to the guidance room? That's not okay? Come on, I can give advice, too."

As Hoshinomiya-sensei continued to follow, a female student came

upto us, a beautiful girl with light-pink hair. I'd never seen her before.

"Hoshinomiya-sensei, do you have a moment? The student council wishes to discuss something with you." She glanced at me, but quickly returned her attention to Hoshinomiya-sensei.

"All right, you have someone who needs you. Get to it."

Slap!

Chabashira-sensei smacked Hoshinomiya sensei on the butt with her clipboard.

"Aw! She'll get mad at me if I hang around any longer. See you later, Ayanokouji-kun! All right, Ichinose-san. Let's go to the faculty office."

With that, she turned on her heel and left with the beautiful Ichinose.

Chabashira-sensei lightly scratched her head while she watchedbHoshinomiya-sensei leave. Soon after, we entered the guidance room, which stood beside the faculty office.

"So, what matters you wanted to discuss?" she asked taking a seat.

She didn't ask me to take a seat first. But I I took it anyway.

"You want to reach Class A, don't you?" I asked without beating around the bush.

"Huh? Where is this coming from? I don't care even if they remain at zero point for next three years." she tried to sound confident.

"You can't lie to me, while you were observing the class. I was observing you, your every move and facial expression."

"Do you know how that sounds? I could expel you for harassing a teacher."

"Will you? I am your only chance to reach Class A. I have seen how

you react whenever someone is absent or someone is using their mobile phone. Every loss in point, hurts you like getting stabbed. You are desperate, when I took the initiative today. Your face was full of hope, a far cry from the usual cold look. My buest guess is that the school provides something extra to the teacher incharge of Class A, like the students. If you want to continue to deny this, then I won't waste my time by helping you."

She sighed and gave up.

"It seems you are living up to the expectations. Yes, I want to reach Class A. But I had given up on the possibility that you would help. So why the change of heart. You figured out the system on the first day, didn't you?"

It seems she was observing as well.

"Yes, I did. But it wasn't a change of heart, it was my plan all along. After all I want to reach Class A too."

"What? But he said you would like to be unknown." she muttered under her breath.

"It seems someone told you about me, who was it?"

"I am not allowed to say that."

"Given that whoever it is assumed that I would like to spend my time being an ordinary student. I guess that was the reason I was placed in Class D. Even though, I aced the entrance exam and the interview."

"Would you stop assuming things, Yes they are the reason, you were placed in Class D."

"My guess, someone from the school board or the chairman himself. Only they have the power to place students in the allotted classes."

"Yes, it's the chairman. You don't know how much trouble, I could be in for revealing this."

So this chairman, knew about that place. Considering that he is still

alive, he must either be an investor or he worked for that man. I have to pay him a visit to know which side his allegiance is.

"Don't worry, I came to my own conclusions. You didn't reveal anything. But enough about that let's focus on the topic at hand. I want you to follow everything I say. Do everything I tell you to do, if you want to reach Class A."

"Ayanokoji, you have some guts. Saying that to a teacher. Why should I follow you knowing that you want to reach Class A as well."

"Wrong answer. I want to reach Class A, yes, but I can do that by abandoning the Class and you. There is the 20 million points method too, right?"

"How do you know about that one? It doesn't matter. If you don't receive any points, how will you save the points needed."

"The same way Kouenji is doing. He figured out the system too. He is buying the points from the seniors in exchange for cash. I could do the same, after all my family is rich."

It was a bluff, I already had a source of points but she doesn't need to know that. Given that the school knows a lot about the history of the students, she would know that my father is rich.

"Additionally, I would personally sabotage the Class, so that you couldn't ever hope to escape this hell."

She glared at me but I was sitting there with an emotionless face. It seems the mask of the easygoing guy, who always smile had slipped off.

"If you have the option of transferring to Class A, then why are you helping the class?"

"That is true but it would be too boring, considering the life I lived till this point. I would start thinking about dropping out voluntarily. So consider yourself lucky and accept my deal."

I don't think she ever expected this meeting to reach a point where I

would be the one blackmailing her. I expected her to blackmail me to help the class, if I didn't contribute but I flipped the script.

"What would I have to do?"

"Your first task, is to break the class tomorrow. I would leave the specifics to you but by the end of it they should be hopeless. They should be battered and bruised from your words, looking for a messiah. From there on I will handle things out."

Hearing this her eyebrows raised.

"You are quite cold. First forcing your classmates to live on scrapes for a month and then leaving them no choice but to follow you."

"I am doing this for their own good. If you have noticed but our class has already spent most of their points. They don't value the things and amenities they are getting. If I had told them that about the system, maybe they would have tried to save their points. But a human being doesn't understand what they haven't experienced first hand. You could say that I saved them from their inevitable doom. About the part of forcing them to follow me, do you really think idiots like Ike, Yamauchi would understand any other way."

"Your logic is understandable but I still feel you are being quiet hard on the others."

"I didn't ask for your opinion, just do as you are told and in exchange the Class D will have the best results amongst the first year in the mid terms."

"I will do as you told me to. Let's see if you can fulfill your promise, Ayanokoji Kiyotaka. But remember if you fail, I will reveal your true self to the class, I have recorded this meeting. Do you think they will admire you after hearing what you did to them." she threatened. Finally feeling victorious by having something over me.

Poor her, she doesn't know who she is playing with.

"Good, do that and I will send my recording to the school in which you carelessly revealed everything to a student, a day before the scheduled date. I would probably have Chie-sensei on board too,

she would vouch for me. After all she hates you, am I right? Let's see how the school takes that."

Her smug expression vanished. I got up from my seat and stood in front of her. Closing the distance, I put my hands beside her head and stared at her menacingly.

"If you think for a moment that you could control me, then you are as childish as Yamauchi while boasting about his physical prowess. Lot more powerful people than you have tried, but it didn't end well for them. So if you want to keep your job, do as I say or else." I left it at that.

She nodded with lightning speed. Slipping my mask on again, I left the room.

----------Flashback end----------

Another big one,

For the first time Ayanokoji showed his true self.

I enjoyed writing this one.

Many people commented many different names for pairing so I will be doing a voting system for the pairing. Whoever you want to vote, comment on their name.

Here are the contestants

Kiryuin Fuka--
It would be hard to right due to being in different year but I think I can come up with some ideas.

Asahina Nazuna--
Same problem, I don't know what I will do after they graduate.

Ichinose Honami--
If this is chosen, then it will happen late second year, as I have plans for her before that.

Kushida Kikyou--

It's tried many times already so I don't think there will be anything new.

Shiina Hiyori--
This one would be interesting to write. Hiyori will be a major character regardless.

Matsushita Chiaki--
This one will be easiest for me to do.

These are the only options. Anyone not here are either because I have some plans for them or I don't want to write them as a love interest.

I request everyone to vote for something new as I would like to try different things.

Anyway that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-1 Ch-12 The Best Friend

Reads: 2089 | Votes: 78 | Comments: 55

As I re-entered the class, chaos was everywhere. People were shouting at each other, some people still in depression.

At moments like this, I truly asked myself. Why am I doing this? The answer came back to me. You will be bored if you didn't.

"Excuse me, everyone. Please pay attention and don't shout. It was literally the first remedy I told you yesterday." I said in a commanding voice.

At this everybody voluntarily became silent, anybody who didn't faced the wrath of the girls.

"Good, now as Sensei told us, our mid terms are in 3 weeks. So our first course of action would be two improve the results and avoiding expulsion. Are we on the same page?"

"Yes!" They answered.

"For that, we will be forming the study groups as discussed yesterday. The study groups would be lead by the students who got atleast 80 or above in the test."

"Ayanokoji-boy, I hope you haven't included me in that list." Kouenji said.

"Don't worry Kouenji, you will be enjoying your freedom. Now the name of the leaders and their group members are as follows -"

I took out a list from my pocket.

'Hirata Yousuke' group
Ijuuin Wataru

Okitani Kyousuke
Onizuka Kiyoshi
Ueno Itsuki
Sugawara Kazuto
Minami Hakuo

'Yukimura Teruhiko' group
Minami Setsuya
Kikuchi Eita
Sotomura Hideo
Makida Susumu
Miyake Akito

'Horikita Suzune' group
Rino Akari
Yokoyama Misaki
Maezono Masami
Ishikura Kayoko
Onodera Kayano

'Matsushita Chiaki' group
Karuizawa Kei
Shinohara Satsuki
Mori Nene
Satou Maya
Ichihashi Ruri
Nishimura Ryuuko

'Wang Mei-yu' group
Hasabe Haruka
Sakura Airi
Azuma Sana
Inogashira Kokoro
Sonoda Chiyo

'Kushida Kikyou' group
Yamauchi Haruki
Ike Kanji
Hondou Ryoutaro
Miyamoto Soshi
Sudou Ken

"This will be the study groups, if you have any problems with the list, don't come to me. Learn to adjust, if you don't know anyone in your group, then get to know them. Make new friends. We have to study together for the next three years. No, Karuizawa. I won't be teaching you."

"But why? What did I do wrong?" she said with a pout.

"You didn't do anything, I won't be leading a study group because I will be overseeing each of them. I would suggest the leaders to gather their members and make a chat group. Also decide the timings and the location for the sessions and inform me immediately. I will be making a chat group for the leaders."

Most of them were satisfied. Some were too shy to complain and others didn't get the chance to complain.

"Ayanokoji, I thought you were our enemy. But clearly you are our friend. Thank you for putting us in Kushida-chan's group."

Whole idiot company as we call them were in Kushida's group. Although she was smiling from the outside, she must be cursing me from the inside.

The algorithm that was extracting students information from the school, gave me the past of all my classmates in details. Not only that I have very sensitive information about everyone in this school. That's the most powerful tool you can have in your arsenal.

I made the groups according to their personality that I observed, like Hirata's group was made of the boys who weren't in the boys group and were shy. Similar with Mei's group which had all the shy girls of our class, so that she is not overwhelmed. Every group was made to work efficiently.

But there was one problem.

"I don't have time to tutor anybody, I would like to focus on my studies." Horikita said.

"Why? Where do you spend your time, it's not like you have any friends."

"Ooh, that was a low blow."

"I can spend my time however I want, it's not your business. Moreover, you clearly let Kouenji do whatever he wants." she complained.

"Horikita, I would rather not waste my time. If you remember yesterday, the bet we made. I won that fair and square, so that means you have to listen to everything I say for the whole month. So it will be better for you to shut up."

"But, you tricked me. How did you got full marks, just by writing for 10 minutes. The last 3 questions weren't even from our year."

"I am just better than you, Horikita. Accept that. Which brings me to Yamauchi, you remember your bet right?"

"Oh, yes. I will follow whatever Matsushita-san says. I am not even mad at loosing to you. First you put me in a cute girls study group and now I have to follow another cute girl's orders." he said enthusiastically.

"See, Horikita even Yamauchi is a better person than you."

"Even if she wants this hot body. I suppose, I will have to sleep with her right?" Yamauchi continued.

Too soon, I said that too soon.

"Yamauchi, my first order is to shut your damn mouth. I will only agree to sleep with one guy and that's Kiyotaka." she said the first part angrily and the second part to herself. She thought nobody heard her.

"Eh, what was that Matsushita-san?" Mori asked.

Well, she's not gonna stop teasing Chiaki.

Although, it was all of a sudden. It was kinda expected. Chiaki and I

grew a lot closer last month. She helped me in all of my plans regarding the store. We went out to eat a couple of times at weekend. That was not all, we used to have cooking classes everyday. So most of the days I used to have dinner with her.

I got to know a lot about her, her family background, her likes, her dislikes. I even fell asleep in her bed one night and narrowly escaped from getting caught in the morning.

I am getting off topic.

"Ayanokouji-kun, but there's still one problem. How can we live without points for the whole month?" Satou asked.

"Yes, I spent all my points on the game system. Do you know how expensive the games were." said Yamauchi.

"That's easy just sell all the products you don't need to the 'One Stop'. They buy second hand stuff in exchange for some points. You probably wouldn't get much, but atleast you can pass by this month."

Many were relieved after hearing this, although the girls didn't wanted to part ways with their branded fashion clothes.

So during lunchtime. Karuizawa came up with an idea of borrowing 2,000 points from everybody, but that failed as the boys knew better than to get trapped in this scheme and the boys who were dumb enough to fall for this didn't have any points to give. She only got points from those shy girls who didn't talk much.

"Hey, Karuizawa. Would come here for a moment." I called her.

"Kiyotaka-kun, do you want to give me some points too. Well as your future girlfriend, you should." she said that loud. Clearly planning to trap me. People started whispering about our potential relationship.

Karuizawa is exceeding my expectations here, she is cunning. Not only she established that we could be in a relationship in the future, but also I have to give her points, so that I don't come off as a rude guy.

But she chose the wrong guy to mess with.

"Actually, you remember. I brought you clothes of worth 12,000 points. So, now I don't have any points. So can you lend me some points that you collected? I ask this as your 'future boyfriend'."

Now she has to give me points she collected, or she will face the wrath of other girls. I can already see Chiaki glaring at her.

"Uh-huh, ho-how many points?" she asked.

"12,000 will suffice."

"Okay" she said with sad expression.

"Don't worry, I am going to return these to you if you do one job for me." I whispered to her as she got closer.

"Eh, Kiyotaka-kun. I don't do those kind of things for money. Although if you ask me properly like a gentleman. I might." she said with a red face.

"What are you talking about? You just have to go and ask Kushida for points, as much as you can not just 2,000. If possible, tell your friends to do the same." I said.

"Why didn't I think of that, she is too nice to deny me. But may I ask why do you want to do that?" she asked.

"If you want your points back, do as you are told." I said seriously.

"Okay-okay, I will do that." she went back frightened.

My first target in this class was Kushida. Her influence, not only in the class but the whole school was very important to weaponize. Her past was the easiest way to control her.

My prediction is that she puts up a mask of the angel, like me to hide her true self. If that is true then it must be taxing for her given the people she has to handle.

Increasing the pressure on her by giving her the idiot company.

Draining her points. Stressing her out will break her and she will reveal herself.

The class for the day ended and by the time I reached my room. The leaders had already given me the timings and the location for their groups.

From here on, monitoring the progress of the groups was important. If any of them started lacking behind, I would have to take control and make some changes myself.

It had been one week already, since the revelation and many things have happened. Sae gave us the syllabus for the mid terms.

The study groups were going smoothly, but I felt something was off. The school wouldn't be so straightforward. They always hide something, I just had to find that out.

As I was scrolling through the group chats, the bell rang. It was Sunday, afternoon. People were either out for the day or in their room. I wasn't expecting anybody.

I saw through the door camera, it was Karuizawa. So I opened the door and invited her in.

"Karuizawa, what are you doing here? Didn't you have some plans with your girlfriends."

"No, I cancelled them. I actually wanted to talk to you about something important. It may take some time, can I sit?"

"Yes-yes, take a seat. Wait a minute, I will brew some coffee and bring some snacks."

I entered the kitchen and started boiling the milk. I already knew what she came here for. I had predicted this meeting, maybe a week or two later. But she wants to talk about it now. I pour the milk in the mugs and added coffee powder and sugar.

"So, what did you want to talk about?" I asked her taking a seat on

the sofa beside her.

"I don't know where to start or how to tell you this, but it is very sensitive topic to me. So I would appreciate if you don't tell anybody, anything about this. I want you to promise Ayanokouji-kun." she pleaded.

"I promise, I won't tell a single soul. But what is it?"

She told me about her past, the bullying she suffered. Every single, awful details. From when she was little, throughout elementary school and junior high.

"After a while, I gave up trying to resist. That's right; I was everyone'svictim. I became cold, robotic. I could cry, scream, or thrash around, but itdidn't matter. I couldn't do anything. All I could do was take it."

"They did all sorts of things. Everything and anything. They'd put tacks in my shoes or stuff my desk full of roadkill. When I went to the bathroom, I'd get splashed with dirty water. They wrote words like 'whore' on my uniform. They pulled my hair and punched and kicked me. Anything you could imagine, basically. I was bullied in every way. Countless times.What I've just told you was just a fraction of what I've experienced. Those were the 'gentler' ways I've been bullied, too. It makes me want to laugh. So, why aren't you laughing? Why don't you laugh at the pitiful loser who's been bullied all her life?"



She broke down on my shoulder. I hugged her tightly. Providing

comfort. This was a moment of making or breaking. Either I could break her with vile words, blackmail her to work for me, make her completely dependent on me. Or I could genuinely win her over with kindness. I chose the latter for couple of reasons.

First of all, due to my own influence. I didn't need her to work for me. Just having her on my side would be enough. Secondly, only Sae truly knows, who I truly am. Showing someone else my true self, this early could cause some problems.

Even after everything she'd suffered, she still got back up. She seemed ready to fight again. Her resilience had motivated her to enroll in this school. Still...the experiences she'd recounted weren't enough to explain everything.

"What else have you suffered?" I asked.

"Huh?"

"Have you told me the whole truth?"I believed that something critical had shattered her spirit before this.There had to be some other reason behind her abnormal fearfulness, something that didn't even show up in her file.

"What are you hiding?"

"Wh-what?" Karuizawa lifted her head from my shoulder and lowered her eyes to look down at her left side. I noticed that, of course. I reached over and touched that part of her body, over her clothes.

"S-stop! It's rude to do that." she shouted. Her shouts echoed within the enclosed walls of the room. I grabbed her uniform and pulled it up. There, on her beautiful skin, was an ugly scar. A deep scar, one that had been created by a sharp blade.

"This is it? This is your darkness?"

"E-eek!"

I touched it. This wasn't the result of simple bullying. A serious scar like this had come from a life-threatening attack. Even though she

was burdened with that horrible past, she remained tough. She got back on her feet.

"Despair comes in many forms. And you've experienced despair. Haven't you?" I asked.

Karuizawa's dark eyes met with mine. People who carry darkness within are attracted to one another. Slowly, they erode each other. Those who conceal a deep darkness will readily embrace the darkness of others.

"Wh-what are you...you..." she stammered.If her past held her captive, then I had to forcefully free her from her shackles. Even if we weren't close, I could feel the darkness from her, through her skin. Yes. There were profoundly dark things left in this world that even Karuizawa didn't yet know about.

"I promise you one thing. From now on, I will protect you from bullying." I told her that.

"H-how did you know I was going to ask you for protecting me."

"Karuizawa, I have observed you for the past month. You act tough in front of others, as a defense. But that doesn't solve the problem. In fact, it just holds the trouble at bay, like a dam holding water. When the dam breaks, you will be drowned by it. Even asking for protection or depending on others, it just increases your chances of drowning. No. I will not just protect you but teach you to swim."

She was crying her heart out. She hugged me tighter than ever.

"Thank you, Thank you, Thank you so much."

"Hey, that's what friends are for. Now, stop crying. If someone were to enter now, they will get the wrong idea."

"Ayanokouji-kun, I was going to ask you-"

"To fake date me. I know."

"How?"

"Don't think that I am dense. I noticed each and every move you tried to make."

"You are the smartest guy, I have ever met."

"I don't know about that. But there's no need to fake date. Until I am by your side, no one will even look at you the wrong way. But, you need to show the world your true self. Not the bitch, they see you as."

"Hey, you are quite rude you know. First you take of my clothes then you touch me without permission and then call me bitch." she pouted.

"You know how exaggerated that is. Besides it didn't look like you minded me touching you at all. In fact you enjoyed it." I teased her.

"Wh-What, no I didn't. Ah-mou. Stop teasing me."

Just like that she was back to normal.

And that's how I gained my first female friend at this school.

It's baffling how much, life has changed in just one month. At first I only wanted to graduate from this school to escape that place. But now, I'm looking forward to many more things.

There goes another one.

Before anyone starts asking

No karuizawa is not the pairing. As the title suggest she will be his best friend.

If someone doesn't like Karuizawa, please read with an open mind. She will be a lot likeable here.

Given by the results of the vote last chapter, Ichinose will be the pairing.

I came up with some ideas already on how to progress. So most likely it won't change unless somehow beats her in the voting with a landslide.

I am excited about writing the ideas, that I came up with for the pairing and trust me they are insane.

Anybody who wanted to see other pairings, I am really sorry. But I would request you to continue to read the story as I will not disappoint.

Moreover, Kiyotaka will be interacting with all of them.

Moving on have you guys read y2v11.

Spoilers(kinda)
Although it didn't progress much plotwise. And the Nagumo Ayanokoji showdown was anticlimactic. I liked the characters interaction.

Red Panda-kun got tricked again. After Horikita's food and yogurt maker. Voice of the forest is his third weakness.

It had its moments but not the most entertaining entry.

That will be all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-13 The Horikitas

Reads: 2018 | Votes: 73 | Comments: 83

"Goodbye, Kiyotaka-kun. It is always fun reading together." said the white haired angel.

"Good night, Hiyori. I will be going for a walk by the sea. See you tomorrow."

"But it's 9 pm already?"

"I tend to spend some alone time walking at night. Especially, nowadays. It's too tiring being a leader."

"Kiyotaka-kun, you should take care of your health first. It's not good for your body to handle this much stress. I don't want to see my only friend get ill." she said with a sad face.

"Hey, don't worry I won't get ill. I admit, being a leader is a stressful job, but I have had worse."

"If you say so, Kiyotaka-kun. But if you need any help don't hesitate to ask me."

"Even if your classmates, hate that you are helping your opponent?"

"Yes, I will always help my friend. I don't care much about class competitions anyways." she said determined to help me.

"You're too sweet Hiyori, I will ask for your help if I need it. Now you should return to your room it's late already."

She gave me a cute smile before leaving.

As Hiyori and I parted ways. I thought about today. It was a week and a half since mid terms were announced and problems for the class started rising.

Chiaki's group was lagging behind in terms of syllabus. Apparently it took a lot of time for Karuizawa and her friends to understand what she was teaching and their location being the most popular cafe in the school premise didn't help either. Most of the time they were distracted staring at boys.

Then there was Sodou after attending a week just to please Kushida, he started bunking. He said that between a cute girl and not studying, he will choose the latter. So now he is attending his club activities.

But, my biggest headache was Horikita's group. I gave her a group of average students not even the worse ones. But she has managed to drive them away. Her methods of criticizing and constantly belittling them had reached peak.

When I ordered her not to do that, she would constantly find a new way to intimidate her group. She is like a rebellious teenager who doesn't listen to their parents.

During my walk, I had reached the third year dormitory building . The backside of the building had a wonderful view of the sea. I usually spent one hour here before going to bed. The moon shining on the water and the cool breeze, with a totally isolated place made an excellent spot to sit back and relax.

But today was different, there were two people already there. One was a senior boy and the other was the she devil, I was thinking about.

I quickly hid behind the bushes. When I looked at the boy, it was none other than the student council president himself.

"Suzune. I didn't think you'd follow me this far," he said.

"Hmph. I'm far different from the useless girl you once knew, nii-san. I came here to catch you."

"Catch me, hmm?"

"I heard you were placed in Class D. I suppose nothing has really changed in the last three years. You've always been fixated on

following me, and as a result you don't notice your own flaws. Choosing to come to this school was a mistake."

"That's... You're wrong about that. I'll show you. I'll reach Class A right away, then-"

"It's pointless. You will never reach Class A. In fact, your class will fall apart soon enough. Things at this school aren't as simple as you think."

"I will definitely, definitely reach-"

"I told you, it's pointless. You really are a disobedient little sister." Horikita's brother stepped closer to her.

From my hiding spot, I could see him clearly. He displayed no hint of emotion. It was like he was staring at an uninteresting object. He grabbed his younger sister by the wrist-she offered no resistance-and pushed her against the wall.

"No matter how I try to avoid you, the fact remains that you're my little sister. If people around here learned the truth, I would be humiliated. Leave this school immediately."

"I-I can't do that... I will definitely reach Class A. I'll show you!"

"How incredibly stupid. Do you want to relive the pain of the past?"

"Nii-san, I..."

"You possess neither the abilities nor the qualities needed to reach Class A. Get that through your head." He moved forward, as if about to act.

And then a harsh slap sound echoed through the night.

He was going to shove her to the ground next.

I thought it was time to reveal myself. I leapt out from my hiding space and went after her brother. Before he knew I was there, I grabbed his right arm, which he was using to pin his sister.

"What? You..." He stared at his arm and slowly turned to me with a sharp gleam in his eye.

"A-Ayanokouji-kun?!" Horikita cried.

"You were about to throw your sister to the ground, weren't you? You do realize the floor here is concrete, right? You might be siblings, but you should know the difference between right and wrong."

"Eavesdropping is not an admirable quality," he said.

"Fine. Then let go."

"That's my line."

We glared at each other in complete silence.

"Stop it, Ayanokouji-kun," said Horikita, her voice strained.

I'd neverheard her voice like that before. Reluctantly, I released her brother. Instantly, he tried to back hand me in the face. I instinctively took a step back to avoid it. For such a lightly built guy, he was a nasty attacker. He then aimed a sharp kick at my unguarded spot.

"Watch it!" He had enough power to knock me out with one blow. Looking slightly confused, he exhaled deeply, extended his right arm, and opened his hand. If I grabbed his hand, he'd probably throw me to the ground.

Instead, I slapped him hard, he had a hand print on his face. With my speed, he didn't even saw it coming.



For a moment, everyone were stunned. Then he spoke.

"Your name is Ayanokoji Kiyotaka, isn't it?" he said.

"Yes, is there a problem?"

"You just slapped a senior, that too the student council president. Did you think you will get away with it?"

"And you just slapped and pinned a first year girl. Sister or not, I don't think it would look good on your resume."

"By your confidence, I assume you recorded it."

"You would be correct. Now it would be better for you, if you apologize to my slave here."

"Slave? Interesting. I didn't think you were into such things, Suzune."

"No-no, it's not like that. Ayanokouji-kun, don't use such crass language in front of nii-san."

"That's not how you should speak to your master who just saved you, like a knight in shining armor." I said to her teasingly.

"Ayanokoji, you have some good reflexes. I didn't imagine you could evade all of my blows so quickly. Also, you seemed to understand quite well what I was trying to do. I didn't even see your attack incoming. Have you been taught?"

"Yes, I was taught piano and calligraphy. Also, when I was inelementary school, I won a national music competition," I said.

"Interesting, but if your school record is correct, then you never went to any school. You're clearly lying."

"I never agreed on telling the truth. But moving on, should I release this clip? The great Horikita Manabu, hitting a little girl."

Judging by the look on her face, Horikita junior didn't appreciate my little girl comment.

"Even if you complain to the school about me physically assaulting you. I could just claim that I was protecting my classmate. People will hail me a hero. If Hori-Suzune here deny my claims, people will chalk it up to her being afraid of her cruel brother. Your odds aren't good here. I could destroy your reputation with a single click."

"You are an interesting individual Ayanokoji, when I saw your file. I was surprised that the student, who was the first person in the history of the school to ace all the subjects in the entrance exam was put into Class D. But you exceeded my expectations. So what are you going to do with the recording?" he said.

"Nothing, I would be a fool to give away such information just to make an enemy of a potential ally. You are the president and given by your statement, student council holds a lot of power. My only request is for you to accept my alliance in exchange for not releasing the clip. Although, you would have to understand that I can't delete the recording."

"I will accept your terms. With you around, maybe Class D really have a chance to grow and reach Class A."

"You flatter me, but one last request. Would you please tell your sister to just listen to my commands like a good slave. Or else she may find herself in a similar situation."

"Although, this master slave relationship you two have going on between you is cute, I would rather not interfere. Well, then I will be taking my leave." he said and left.

It was worth a try. I looked at Suzune, she was sitting on her knees. I gave her a hand up.

We sat on a bench and I brought some coffee from the vending machine.

"It's not like, I am not grateful but please don't interfere in my personal matters next time." she said with an expression somewhere in between anger and gratefulness.

"You mean to say, you like to get smacked by your brother. Suzune, do you dream about him smacking you at night."

"If you continue to talk to me like that then you have a painful time ahead of you and don't call me Suzune."

"No can do, it would confuse me, your brother is Horikita too."

Horikita fell silent once again.

"Your older brother is really strong. He doesn't lack ferocity."

"He's ranked fifth dan in karate and fourth dan in aikido." Whew, he was really strong. If I hadn't pulled stunned him with that slap, it would've ended badly for me.

"You also practice martial arts, don't you, Ayanokouji-kun? You must hold a dan rank."

"I told you, didn't I? Just piano and tea ceremony."

"You said calligraphy before."

"I...did calligraphy in addition to those, yes."

"You got highest test scores in entrance exams, and you say that you just studied piano and calligraphy, yet you slapped my brother and blackmailed him. I really don't understand you."

"My scores were a testimony to how superior, I am to you. But I really did do piano, tea ceremony,and calligraphy."

If there were a piano here, I could at least have performed"Für Elise."

"You saw a strange side of me."

She didn't notice my superior comment or she have accepted it.

"On the contrary, I always thought of you as a normal girl. Well, not really." Horikita glared at me.

"Let's go back. If anyone saw us out here, they'd probably get ideas."

She was certainly right about that. Rumors about a boy and a girl hanging out alone in the dark would be bound to circulate. Not to mention the fact that our relationship seemed to be intensifying. Horikita got up slowly and walked toward the dorm.

"Are we not gonna address the elephant in the room, your study

group?"

"What about it?"

"Suzune, look. You may feel good about yourself by rebelling against me but at the end of the day, you will just be a disappointment. Just like your brother said."

"Don't you dare bring my brother into this."

"Why shouldn't I, even though his methods were wrong. It's an undeniable fact that you are a cold hearted bitch as he said. If you don't contribute to the class, you are no better than the people you consider inferior to you."

"Huh" her face was slack-jawed. I was clearly getting to her.

"Did you ever stop to think that maybe those inferior people are actually better than you, in something else. Maybe if you help them improve their studies, they will help you with something you are not good at."

"But this school judges us based on our abilities, if they are not good at studies. Why do we need them?"

"You still believe that we will only compete on the basis of education, this school test us in every way. Let me give you a hypothesis, there is a Class A student who is good at studies, physical activity and has excellent communication skills. He can work well in team environment. On the other side, there is you. Just good at studies, mid in physical activities and horrendous communication skills. If you are in a team, chances are that team will break apart. Now who do you think, a company will offer a job to?"

"I g-guess the Class A student." she said reluctantly.

"Do you see, you have even less chance than even Average students in our class. I literally gave you a chance to improve yourself, I gave you a group of people who, if treated right will become loyal to you. I gave you an opportunity to stand up and improve yourself and instead you throw that away. Due to lack of maturity."

"If you continue like this, then you would become just a shame to your brother. You think you are so smart, don't you? Remember Suzune, in this world there is always a bigger fish and I am the biggest fish there is, so let go of your delusions that you are special. I have seen people better than you in dozens."

"You are not even the best in our class, when it comes to studies and you claim that's your strongest field. If I was your brother, I too would have like to forget that I have such a weak and pitiful sister."

By this point Horikita's head was touching the ground with shame. Tears were leaking out of her eyes.

"So, what it's gonna be? Horikita Suzune. Empty claims to your brother about reaching Class A or actually doing something in your life."

"I will become better Ayanokouji-kun, I will become someone, who even my brother can't ignore. I have one request for you, will you help me?" she looked at me with pleading eyes.

Not gonna lie, Horikita looked cute at that moment. I put a hand on her shoulder and looked her in the eyes and said with all my sincerity.

"That's what a good master does."

"You didn't had to ruin it."

That's a wrap.

A chapter dedicated to break the ice queen. I promise that from here on she will be a likeable character.

I changed the cover for the story, tell me how you like it.

I watched the ep11 of s3 and realized that I forgot to add Arisu to the pairing poll.

So I am going to do another poll, without Ichinose. As she have

already won.

But whoever wins this poll may get a chance to date him because as I said Ichinose pairing will happen in mid to late second year. Till then it would be too empty.

Although don't worry, Ayanokoji will not cheat on them to be with Ichinose.

So here are the new contestants.

Sakayanagi Arisu

Matsushita Chiaki

Shiina Hiyori

Kiryuiin Fuka

Asahina Nazuna

Kushida Kikyou

Satou Maya

I would like to see who wins, if Ichinose is not there.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-14 The Angels and Demons

Reads: 1848 | Votes: 77 | Comments: 36

I was sitting at the Library with Matsushita's group.

They were lagging behind severely, so I forced them to change their location. Since they have made steady progress. Although, me personally teaching them had a hand in it too.

Right now Matsushita was busy doing something, so I was the tutor.

The Horikita problem was solved as she apologized to her group members. Her group has been progressing as well. Even though they started a week and a half late. Most of the students in her group were already a little better than average, so I had no doubts that they would get it covered.

During the session, a girl from Class B came to Mori. She had an average height, black hair and blue eyes. She looked like Kei, but with black hair.

"Hello, Mori-san. I am surprised to see you here and who is this hot guy. Is he your boyfriend?" she looked at me inquisitively.

I never thought someone could beat Mori, in terms of teasing but here we are. Mori was busy blushing so I took the charge.

"Hello, I am Ayanokoji Kiyotaka. Nice to meet you. And I am not a boyfriend of anyone present here." I replied.

"Ooh, so you are single. I am Amikura Mako. Don't mind if I try flirting with you. But what are you doing here with girls?"

"He is our tutor, Mako-chan. Now would you please leave us." Shinohara replied.

Usually it would have been Kei, who said something like that but ever since our conversation she has been improving her attitude.

"Hey, hey. I am just asking. But, what are you guys studying. That's not in our syllabus." she said looking at the book, Mori was holding.

"It is not? Would you mind terribly, if I take a look at the syllabus, Class B received."

"Not at all, it's with Honami-chan. I will call her." she said and went towards the group of Class B students.

She returned shortly with the beautiful girl with light pink hair, I saw her on the day of meeting with Sae.

"Hello everybody. I am Ichinose Honami, official representative of Class B. Nice to meet you everyone." she said enthusiastically.

Her charm and beauty was off the charts. I wouldn't be surprised if she was the most popular girl in our school. But the interesting part was official representative.

As I was assessing her, Mako started teasing me.

"Hey, looks like someone can't get their eyes off of Honami-chan. I am jealous of you, Honami-chan. Scoring such a hot guy without even trying." she looked at Ichinose.

"Wha-No, don't say that Mako-chan. You will make him uncomfortable like others with your straightforwardness." she said with a red face.

"It's not a problem, I am pretty much immune to teasing due to Mori. I am Ayanokoji Kiyotaka, representative of Class D. Pleased to make your acquaintance." I moved my hand forward to shake and she accepted it. I expected a little disgust from other leaders, considering we are the worst class but she clearly was different.

"It's wonderful to meet a fellow leader for the first time, Mako-chan told me you wanted to see the syllabus we received?"

"Yes, may do you mind if I take a look?"

"Not at all, I am happy to help. Here, it is." she gave me her phone. I was surprised because generally you just hand your phone to a person you just met. She was a trusting type, although a little naive.

"As expected, there are some chapters included here that aren't in our syllabus. But interesting enough, we too have some chapters that aren't in your syllabus. Wait, a moment." I gave back her phone and took out mine. Everyone were confused, as to what I was doing.

I messaged Hiyori, about the syllabus she received for mid terms. She instantly sent me the pic of her exam syllabus.

"So, that's what going on. The school hid a test even in the syllabus. The test was to find out the real syllabus." I said.

"I don't understand, what do you mean Ayanokouji-kun." Ichinose said.

"The school gave each class some chapters which are actually coming in the exams mixed with some baits. Only the person who has the syllabus for all the classes will find out the common chapters, which is the actual syllabus." I explained.

"In a nutshell, every class is given 75% real topics and 25% baits. So, by seeing other classes syllabus. One can find out the actual syllabus. It is hard to find out with even two classes as there are some topics which are present in Class B and Class D syllabus, but aren't in the Class C. So that means those are fake too."

"Whoa, that's so smart. You really are intelligent Ayanokouji-kun. You figured out all of that, with just one clue." Ichinose looked at me with interest.

"It was a stroke of luck, if Amikura didn't notice our study material, we would have been in the dark. You clearly helped as well."

"Don't downplay your intelligence, Ayanokouji-kun."

"Are you two done flirting. We still have to find Class A's syllabus. How do we do that?" Amikura said.

"We can just ask them, right? Why is that a problem?" said Satou.

"If we do that, they will be suspicious of us and we don't want to do that. Class A is full of academically good students. If they have a handicap, we may have chance to win." Ichinose said.

She maybe naive, but she knows who is her enemy.

"Or we could just ignore them. We already have the upper hand due to the three classes working together, maybe we miss a couple of chapters. But Class A is at heavy disadvantage." I said.

"I can agree to that, let's not go poking when it's not necessary." she said.

This was good, not only I established an unofficial alliance with Class B. That may come handy later. But she fell into my trap as even though, Class B knew most of the syllabus. Class D will have the question paper itself. If my plans go alright.

"I will take a leave now, I have to tell my class about this development." she said.

Before she could leave, I stopped her.

"Ichinose, if I may ask. What is the official class representative tag? Is it something we have to assign in our class?"

"Yes, each class has to select a leader and a co-leader, who are the class representatives. We have to submit the names to our class teacher. You guys didn't know that?"

"No, maybe sensei forgot. Don't worry it's not a problem. That will be all."

Then she left with Amikura.

"Does that mean, we wasted our time studying this? We only have a week left for Mid terms. Oh! We are so screwed." Kei exclaimed.

"Don't say that Kei, studying is not a waste of time. Its always beneficial even if you study outside the syllabus. Moreover, these topics may come for our final exams." I said.

"But, we don't have time to study extra stuff. We would fail." said Nishimura.

"Trust me, I won't let you guys fail. It's a promise." I said with confidence.

"If Ayanokouji-kun says so." said Shinohara.

The study session continued as normal, albeit with a heavy environment.

I was sitting on the bench overlooking the sea, near the third year building when she arrived.

"You called me to come see you urgently, is everything alright?" she said with worry on her face.

"I just wanted to talk to you, alone. The last few days has been pretty stressful for you, right? Helping the class, studying for the exam. Moreover managing the worst group of students, I have seen. I know it is hard for you."

"Don't say that Ayanokouji-kun. They may be a little slow but they are not the worst students. But thank you for caring about me." she said.

"You are too kind, Kushida. I expected if someone were in your place, they would just go to an empty place like the rooftop and curse those idiots, all they want, whoever they want."

"You can imagine pretty wild situations, Ayanokouji-kun. But I would never do that. Everyone is my friend and I never hate them." she said with her cute voice. Any normal highschool teenager would have been flat after hearing that voice.

"Take a seat and enjoy the view, Kushida. It gets very pleasant here at this time." I invited her to sit.

"Thank you, Ayanokouji-kun. Although if someone saw us here, they might get the wrong idea."

"Kushida, if someone liked you very much and gathered enough courage to propose to you. Would you reject them?"

"Ayanokouji-kun, are you asking this for someone else or for yourself?"

"I-I maybe, for myself?"

"Ayanokouji-kun, you are cute but I am really sorry. It's not your fault but I think we will be better off as friends."



"B-but, Kushida. I thought you will never hurt me. Please, I will do anything. Don't say no."

"Ayanokouji-kun, I think it's really sweet that you like me but I am really sorry." she pleaded with her adorable eyes.

"I don't just like you, I love you. If you don't say yes right now and

kiss me. If you don't let me do dirty things to you. Th-then, I am going to jump the railing and dive into the sea."

"What! Ayanokouji-kun please think clearly, it's not right. I can't do that."

"I see, you have made up your mind then. Don't worry Kushida, your life here is going to become hell. I already left a note saying that if I am found dead in the sea, it's because you forced me to. When the school finds out that you bullied me to my death, what will happen to you? Hope you are happy now, Kushida." I started walking towards the ledge.

"No! Think clearly you idiot, don't just end your pitiful existence and blame me. You are just like those perverts, who are after my body. You can't even date an ugly girl, yet dream about dating me. Ugh! You know what just die already. I don't even care anymore."

"Well, well. Look who has joined us. It's the real Kushida herself." I said to her with a grin on my face. I sat on the railing with the open sea behind me.

"Huh, what was that? What is going on?" she was perplexed.

"I just gave you a little taste of your own medicine. I must say your face was priceless. Was my acting that good?"

"Acting but, ugh! What do you think you are doing you imbecile mongrel. I thought my life was ruined."

"There isn't much going on in your upstairs, is it? I personally could have found several ways to get out of it. But, you are such a hypocritical woman, aren't you?"

"What do you mean?"

"What about those lives you destroyed, in your previous school. What about that guy, whose life you destroyed, that he committed suicide. Take this as a small payback for your unpunished crime."

"How do you know?"

"I have my sources. I know everything about you, Kushida. How you act nice on the outside but are rotten inside. I know how you revealed everyone's secret, when they found out about your true self."

I knew about these things because it was in her file that the school database had. Although it wasn't clear that the suicide thing was related to her but it was mentioned in her file, so I just guessed some things.

She was silent for a while but then she started smiling. Although, it was an unsettling one. It was cute on her face.

"You know about me but you can't tell all of these things to anybody. Nobody will believe, you may have some influence but if I shed a tear or two, nobody will believe you. They will despise you for making their angel cry. That's how society works. If there is no proof, then it's the guy's fault." she said with a giggle.

"Yes, that's how it goes but what if I had a proof. Perhaps, this recording will do?" I showed her the recorder that I hid.

Her smile became a little strained but she continued to show her teeth.

"Oh yeah, then wouldn't it damage your reputation as well. The great Ayanokoji Kiyotaka, begging to be kissed by me."

"I admit not my best moments, but it was necessary to bring the real you out. I can just edit that part."

She came closer to me and took my hand in her hands with a pleading expression. Anyone else would have thought she was going to beg. Suddenly, she snatched the recorder and threw it into the ocean.

"But what if, I claim that you threatened to rape me, if I didn't do as you said. Now you don't even have the proof, I threw the recorder away. Whereas my friends know that I came here to meet you." she said sinisterly. She took my hand and pressed it against her balloons.



"Kushida, as flattered I am that you let me touch you. You are not understanding the situation here. You just admitted that you will falsely accuse me." I took out another recorder.

"What, how many do you have?"

"This is the last one."

She tried to snatch it, surprisingly she was successful.

"Oh no! What am I gonna do? It's not like I am with a girl half the size of me, I can't hope to overpower her." I said with the most monotone voice there was.

"You think this is funny, I will destroy you. I will destroy everything you love. You messed up with the wrong person."

"Okay, miss standard villain. Remind me to buy you a clown costume, at your birthday."

"Ugh, you shitbrain. Do you not understand, I have the recorder."

"What if I have another one?"

"Then I will destroy it too." she lost it. She came at me at a snail's pace, hoping to push me off the railing.

I just sidestepped her and yawned. She threw consecutive punches. A sane person would have dodged it, but I took all of them.

"Ow, it hurts a lot Kushida. What do you eat for breakfast? Air." I said my voice full of sarcasm.

Interestingly, when nothing worked she tried to bite me.

"Whoa, Kushida calm down. I didn't know you were kinky."

"Why don't you just lose!!!"

She was out of breath. Her eyes were of an insane person. I finally caught her hand and threw her to the ground.

"Kushida, you don't have any chance to defeat me. Even if you try your best. Now, let's talk business."

At this, I left her in the same position and observed her. She slowly sat up and looked at me with fear in her eyes.

"You know those recorders don't work, I bought them for free. All of that was to show you how I can control you without even trying,

how pathetic you are. I didn't record a single thing. To be technical today because I have recorded you venting at the rooftop. Do you remember 'Die Ike, die Yamauchi.', I wonder how your biggest simps will take that."

"What do I have to do?"

"You are going to be my most crucial piece in this game. You will be my queen. You will be my propaganda machine, you will influence the class to follow me. If someone resists me, they will not resist you. With this, I will put the final piece together. Everything I say you will do it. If I order you to kill someone, you will ask whom. Not only that, you will be my eyes and ears to the other classes."

I bent down and came face to face with her. I caressed her cheeks.

"Of course, I never abandon those who help me, so your secret will be safe with me. Not only that, I will make sure that nobody else knows your true self. Just follow me and I will make all your fantasies, a reality. Just surrender yourself to me."

With each word my voice became softer. She had a blissful face. Imagining what she could do. I wanted her to believe that she will have all the powers, if she worked with me.

"But, if you even think about betraying me. I will make sure that there is no corner on earth, safe for you." I was lightly choking her.

She immediately nodded, so I removed my hands. Was it just me or she enjoyed that?

"Well, if that's out of the way. Weather is pleasant tonight, isn't it?" my mask was back on.

"It definitely is Ayanokouji-kun." she replied with her angelic voice.

I smiled. As expected from my queen.

Kiy o is on a roll here, this chapter Kushida, last chapter

Horikita, previous to last chapter Karuizawa.

He is collecting left and right.

Although, please note. He addresses Kushida as his queen. It means in the game, not as in real life where he is the king and she is his queen type.

I know it's a very used idea. But at least I changed how it happened.

How do you feel about what happened in this chapter. Personally, I don't think it was much. Considering what I have read in some fanfictions. Koji just plays around with her.

An important thing to note is that this Ayanokoji breaks you with his words rather than actions. He would make you feel pathetic, destroy your self confidence and then build you up with kind words.

Right now in the latest pairing vote, Asahina is winning. I am not opposed to doing it. But if you want to see someone else, you can still vote.

The pairing will come into play from the second volume, so there's not much time left.

If someone feels that the story is slow, please be patient. I like to set up the characters first, so that later it doesn't feel half cooked. But trust me the story will gain speed once it reaches volume 3.

Now, on update topic. My exams are over so, I will be updating frequently. But still don't expect me to update, everyday.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-1 Ch-15 The Clown

Reads: 1756 | Votes: 80 | Comments: 40

"So, would you mind telling me, why you didn't say anything about class representatives?" I glared at Sae.

We were sitting in her cabin in the faculty office.

"So, you came to know about that. I was hoping you wouldn't." she answered.

"Why? I am helping you, aren't I?"

"Because you are an unreliable variable. You didn't tell anything about point system to your classmates, just for your entertainment. I will not accept that you are helping me, unless you bring in good results. Being a class representative is a serious role. Once submitted, they can't be changed unless the person is expelled. The power they hold is immense. They have the final say in class related matters, even the teacher can't interfere." she explained.

"Cool, then submit my name to the school. Whole class has already agreed to it. You can go and ask them, but that would be just a waste of your time."

She sighed and gave in. Knowing that it was worthless to try and change the outcome.

"Then whose name are you submitting as the co-leader? In your absence, he or she will hold the powers of the leader."

"Kouenji Rokusuke"

"What!!" she shouted.

"There is no need for shouting woman, I was kidding. Matsushita Chiaki is the name."

"I swear you will be the death of me. I have noted the names and I will submit it. Now if you don't have any other inquiry, you can leave."

"Is it that time of the month, why are you so irritated?"

I narrowly escaped death. That woman could really throw things at insane speed.

As I started walking towards cafeteria, my new friend joined me.

"Judging by the way you came out running, you said something inappropriate, didn't you?" Kushida said.

"Did I? I just stated the facts. Anyways, you got the recording I sent you?"

"Yes, I still can't believe that you were able to record me, during my ranting session. I never felt your presence."

That was good, it means Chiaki is a good stalker. Yes, she is the one who recorded Kushida. I gave her the task to stalk Kushida, 24x7. Well not exactly 24x7, because she didn't stalk Kushida during her sleep. That's why I had to take her group sessions.

"I told you, Kushida. I am someone you cannot comprehend to defeat. So let go of thinking such trivial things."

"That's something, I have come to understand. But why did you invite me to lunch. You have some plans, don't you?"

"I am glad you are catching on fast. Yes, we are going to the cafeteria to buy the exam question papers."

"I will not even ask. But why did you need me?"

"Kushida, if it comes down to dealing with a boy. Although I will prefer to deal with a girl. You are the perfect bait, do you understand what I mean."

"Yes, even though I don't like it. I will follow you." she said with genuine sadness.

It was three days, since that incident. But she is already much more open around me. Her genuine emotions are only seen by my eyes.

We reached the cafeteria and I started to search for a perfect candidate but then my eyes fell upon two beautiful girls. By the looks of it, they were from second year.

One of them had waist-length chocolate -brown hair that was adorned by a hair pin in shape of sunflower along with purple eyes. The second one had long platinum blonde hair and crimson eyes.

I approached them. They were sitting in isolation. As I approached them, the hair pin girl noticed me.

"Hello there Kōhai, do you guys need anything?" she asked.

"Yes, actually. I am Ayanokoji Kiyotaka, this girl here is Kushida Kikyou. I need to ask a favor, would you mind?" I asked in a professional voice.

"Not at all, by the way my name is Asahina Nazuna. How can I help you?"

"Can you please take a look at this question paper and tell us if you have seen the questions before?" I asked.

"Why would you want to do that? Ayanokoji." The platinum haired girl, sitting beside her asked.

"Call it intuition, but I have a feeling that the question paper for the first mid term of the first-year are always repeated."

Both of them were shocked although the platinum haired girl was grinning like a maniac.

"You would be correct, Ayanokouji. The papers are repeated. Do you know why?" she asked.

"So that the academically weak students are not expelled right

away?"

"You are an interesting one, which class are you from?"

"Class D, surprised?"

"This just gets better and better."

"Ayanokouji-kun, you are a magician. I don't think I have ever seen Fuka-chan, talk to someone other than me."

"I am flattered, really. But I need to ask another favor. Would you please give us your first year mid term question paper."

"I am really sorry, but I can't do that. Not for free, you must pay something to buy it, it's the rules." Asahina said.

"How about a date? Nazuna senpai. Just a friendly date, if you want. I really don't have anything to pay and if I don't get those papers, my classmates will be expelled. Please, Senpai."

"You want to go to a date with me? Why?"

"Why not, you are the most beautiful senpai at this school."

Which wasn't a lie. She clearly was one of the most beautiful girl in this school. It also helped that she had a model like figure. Especially those thighs. I feel I would never wake up if I slept on them. Focus! What in the world was that?

"I get it that you want to flatter her so that she gives you the papers, but don't forget about me Kōhai-kun. I feel hurt."

"I am terribly sorry, Senpai. You are quite beautiful as well but clearly not as much as Asahina-senpai."

The subject of the conversation was blushing furiously.

"You are such a tease, Ayanokouji-kun. Just give me your number and I will send the picture of the question paper. But don't forget about the date."

"I get the question paper, then I get a chance to go to a date with a beautiful senpai and now I am getting the number of the said senpai as well. Should I buy a lottery ticket next?"

"It's a shame you didn't try to flirt with me. Maybe your day would have been a lot more lucky. My name is Kiryúin Fūka. But you can call me just Fūka."

"Nice to meet you, Fūka-senpai. Although I wouldn't mind your number as well."

As we were exchanging numbers. A guy with light blonde hair and light blue eyes came to our table. He had an entourage of people following him.



"Hello Nazuna, what are you doing with these people. Come join

us." he said while looking at me.

Hey, what did I do wrong?

"Sorry Miyabi, I decided to spend some time with Fūka-chan today." she answered.

"Then who is this guy over here?"

"Hi, I am Ayanokoji Kiyotaka. Pleasant to meet you." I extended a hand for shaking. But he ignored it.

Well someone is on a high horse.

"Which class are you from?"

"1st year, Class D."

"Ah, so you are one of the defects. No wonder you don't know who I am." he said with a smug grin.

"Miyabi, you shouldn't talk like that with a kōhai. I apologized on his behalf Ayanokouji-kun." she said to me.

"It's not a problem. If bragging in front of a first year helps him sleep at night then let it be." I smiled at her.

"I don't have time for such petty talks, student council has been exceedingly busy, nowadays. Do you know how much responsibility a vice president has?" he thought I would be impressed or intimidated by his rank. Pity, he didn't know I blackmailed the president himself.

"What work does student council have other than to just exist as a showcasing body?"

"You wouldn't understand, there has been a big scam going on. Millions of points has been stolen from the accounts of the second and third year students, in its place fake points has been shown. It is a very complex case that I am investigating, not for your simple brain."

"Okay, then it must be someone for the first years. Only the seniors were attacked, weren't they? It's a simple case."

"You would think that. But I am smarter. The investigation show that this attack happened by a program that breached the school systems. It happened during the first week of April. There is no way a first year student, could have done something like that. It was a fakeout to fool me." he boasted.

Looks like my bait worked. I knowingly left the first years because it would be suspicious. Along with the timing, it would either look to good to be true or impossible. He chose the latter.

"That's all good, but should you reveal such sensitive information to a first year student? How will Horikita-Senpai take that?" I smiled innocently.

"You bastard, you think you can just snitch to senpai and I will just sit back. Be careful, you are playing with fire." He glared at me. I had seen better.

"There is no need for that. I got what I came for. Thank you, Asahina-senpai. I will be taking my leave but Asahina-senpai, don't forget our date. Message me the date and timings, you have my number." I said to her before leaving. But actually I was bragging in front of this Miyabi guy. He was pissed.

Kushida and I started walking towards another table to eat.

"You know, seeing you trash talk the vice president. I think I made the right choice. Although why did you ask a senpai for date?"

"Why, you jealous?" I winked at her.

"No! I was just asking. Don't think I will ever feel any affection towards you." she replied defensively.

"Ouch! You hurt my weak heart, Kushida-chan. Here, I thought you would be thankful, because I didn't use you to lure a boy. I could always send you to a date with Ike and Yamauchi, if you want."

"Shut up, you wouldn't dare." she glared at me cutely.

Amidst all of this, I saw a group of people holding down Sudo.

As we came close, I saw a guy with shoulder-length magenta hair that is styled on either side, and sharp magenta coloured eyes that would strikes fear and trepidation onto anyone he comes into contact with.

"He is Ryūen Kakeru, you can call him the dictator of Class C. I have heard he is a delinquent and everybody in Class C fears him." Kushida said.

"I know a girl who doesn't."

"Hey, Walmart Hitler. Don't you understand the assignment. We should not misbehave in front of the camera. So, kindly tell your 'Wehrmacht' to back off." I said aloud drawing everyone's attention.

"What is 'Wermat'?" Kushida asked me.

"'Wehrmacht', It was the name of Hitler's army."

"If it isn't the angel of Class D. Keep your dog from barking." Ryūen said to Kushida.

"If we were using kindergarten insults, you should have informed me. Mr. Walmart Hitler."

"Got a lot of confidence, have you? A single slap will bring you down to earth." he said as he moved towards me.

"I don't know about that. But first you would have to make contact. Are you capable of that?" I asked tilting my head.

"Hey, know who you are talking to. Ryūen-kun took down Albert. Who do you think you are?" said the boy with dark green hair.

"Grrr, there is still time to free me and apologize or I will beat you all up." shouted Sodou.

"Sodou, calm down. Unlike these uncultured swines. We don't want to lose points." I said.

"How can you lose points, when you don't have them? Now piss off little guy." Ryūen said.

"Okay, first of all. Your first line was good. But second line ruined it. Second, nobody here has right to call anyone a little guy, when that tank is standing there." I pointed towards the tall Afro-Japanese male, he was muscular and heavily built.

"Ah, meet Yamada Albert. He is one of my henchman, this hair is Ishizaki Daichi." Ryūen introduced me to Yamada.

"Hello there, nice to meet you both. I am Ayanokoji Kiyotaka." I said.

"Hello." Albert said one word.

"Hi, I am Ishizaki." he reintroduced himself for some reason.

"It's weird, how you guys went from fighting to introducing each other." said Kushida clearly confused.

"We boys tend to do that." replied Ishizaki.

"So, are we going to settle this, in peace or in chaos." I looked at Ryūen.

"Kukuku, I like the cut of your jib. Let him go, Ishizaki. We have got what we wanted." he said and left. The others let Sudou go and followed him.

Got what he wanted. Interesting.

"Sodou, kindly refrain from getting into these types of situations. Not only you would have gotten hurt, you would have hurt our class points as well." I said to him.

"I could have taken them all. Don't interfere next time." he glared at me and left.

"Sure you would buddy, sure you would."

Kushida and I finally sat down at a table and opened our Bento box.

When the attack happened.

"Ayanokouji-kun, you are so brave."

"Yes, you were so cool. You stood up to that bully. When other guys were hiding."

"I told you, Ayanokouji-kun is the best. He could have beaten all of them."

"Yes, have you seen his biceps. What wouldn't I give, just to feel them."

And the onslaught continued. Looks like I won't get to eat my lunch in peace.

It was Thursday, classes for the day had ended, everyone were stressed as tomorrow is the mid terms. Before they could leave, I stood up on the podium and faced the class.

"Boys and girls, may I have your attention please. Kouenji, I believe you won't be interested to what I will say, so you can leave." I announced.

Everybody stopped what they were doing. Well everybody except Kouenji, who got up and left. I didn't have a problem with that as I knew he would get good grades without any help.

"I know everybody is anxious and nervous about tomorrow, but there is no need to. You all have worked so hard, last three weeks. You gave everything you got, just remember those lessons and be confident in your own abilities and I am damn sure no one can beat us."

"Yeah, we will win!" everybody cheered, the mood was lifted.

"But, before leaving. Don't forget to collect tomorrow's question papers, from Kushida."

At this the whole class fell silent.

"What are you saying, Ayanokouji-kun?" asked Hirata.

"As I said, these questions will be coming tomorrow. Every question from every paper in the same order." I said confidently.

"What! Did you steal the question paper from the school?" said Horikita with concern.

"I did no such thing, the method I used is totally legal. It doesn't breach any rules. So take it, read it, memorize it and ace tomorrow's test. Just trust me." I said and left like Kouenji. I trust Kushida will handle the rest.

In the class -

"Kushida-san, is it true? What Ayanokouji-kun said." asked Inogashira.

"Yes, everybody. Please trust Ayanokouji-kun and read these questions thoroughly. He did all of this so that you all could pass with flying colours." Kushida said.

"If Kushida-chan said, then it must be true. Thank you so much Kushida-chan. If you weren't here, we would have failed." Ike said.

"Hey simp, say if Ayanokouji-kun wasn't here what would have happen. He is the one who saved us." said Karuizawa. All the girls and boys except for the idiot company nodded.

One by one, everyone took the papers and left. Everybody thanked Kushida and said to her to give Ayanokouji-kun there thanking as well.

I met Kushida again, at our meeting spot. It was night time and a pleasant breeze was blowing.

"You are cruel, Ayanokouji-kun. Calling to meet me here. It brings back bad memories. You should care about how I feel." she said in her usual sweet voice.

"So, I take it all went well."

"Yes, everybody took the papers. I even gave the paper with wrong answers in English questions to him. Nobody suspected anything." she informed. I nodded in satisfaction.

"You did well, want a gift?" I asked her.

"Gift? What kind of gift?"

"You hate Horikita for some reason, don't you?"

"Are you a psychic, I never slipped up, in fact if anyone saw us would have thought the opposite. I guess, nothing can be kept hidden from you."

It was a simple deduction, the data showed that Horikita went to the same school as Kushida. There was no way Horikita didn't know a single thing about Kushida's incident. From there, Kushida constantly trying to make Horikita her friend was explained. The hate part was easy. Kushida Kikyou hates everybody.

"So, how would you feel seeing Horikita get slapped by her brother."

Her eyes lit up like a child hearing about buying his favorite candy.

"Show me, please." she gave me the puppy dog eyes, at least that's what Kei told me they are called.

After watching the recording of the Manabu incident, she leaned against me. We sat there quietly for a while until Kushida broke the silence.

"So, would you explain why you didn't gave the question paper before today, since you knew about buying papers thing when the mid terms were announced. Wouldn't they have better chances of getting good grades?" Kushida asked in her original voice, all the sweetness gone. I preferred this one.

"All is going according to my calculations. If our classmates were lacking in any subjects, I would have given them the papers before.

But the study groups were effective. Even if I hadn't given them the papers, they would have at least passed. Other classes don't even know the whole syllabus, especially Class A which is the biggest threat. So I took a gamble for long term benefits." I explained.

"But how did you know about the paper plan in the first place?"

"Remember what sensei said before giving us the question paper for the test that happened the day I revealed the system. She said these are for future reference. I ran some Moreover, when she said she was confident that there was a way for all of us to pass, even the idiot company."

"I ran some hypothesis, I arrived at a point where I thought for what reason the second and third year questions were given in the paper. From there answer was clear."

"You thought all of that, just from the two unimportant lines that nobody would have paid attention to. I can't even believe it." she was so shocked that she was silent for quite a while.

"But what about that date? Was it a part of your plans too?" she asked.

"It was something I came up with at that moment. Since the day I beat Kouenji in the swimming competition. He has been showing off to me, about how many senior girls he has been with. So I thought why not? Maybe I should go on a date with a senior too."

"I never took you as a person who would engage in such petty competitions, Ayanokouji-kun."

"It's not petty if you get to date a beautiful woman." I said. She was silent after that.

I didn't know an hour had passed. It was 10 pm already. I looked at Kushida, who was still leaning against me. On further observation, I found out that she was asleep.

What do you do in such a situation? She looked so adorable. I never noticed but Kushida did have a good body. My eyes wandered from her legs to her gorgeous thighs then to her chest. I shook my self

out of it.

It was a weird feeling, one that I never felt before. It was not love, if the things about love I have read correctly but something related.

Now, in those stories the boy carries the girl to her bed and tucks her in. Should I do that? So I did the best thing I could have done.

"Kushida wake up, Ike is fantasizing about you and jerking himself." I shouted in her ear. Her eyes flew open.

"What! That bastard, I will kill him." she said aggressively.

"He is in his room. Want to go beat him up?" I asked her seriously.

"You are so mean. You could have just carried me to my room when I was asleep." she said with a pout.

"No can do, if I were to be caught. I will be done for. So walk yourself home." I said and left.

Another one,

This one introduced a lot of important characters.

Still nobody has beaten Nazuna on the poll so I set up that route.

There were some continuations about previous happenings like the scam that Koji pulled off is now noticed by the school. None other than our resident clown is investigating it.

Next chapter will be the mid terms and the last chapter of volume 1. Pretty excited for volume 2.

We have reached 10k views on the story so thank you very much guys.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day and night  

Vol-1 Ch-16 The Prestige

Reads: 1706 | Votes: 81 | Comments: 17

But you wouldn't clap yet. Because making something disappear isn't enough; you have to bring it back. That's why every magic trick has a third act, the hardest part, the part we call "The Prestige".

- The Prestige

"There are no absences today. It appears everyone is present."Chabashira-sensei strode through the classroom with a bold smile on her face.

"That's the first hurdle for you leftovers. Are there any questions?"

"We've studied diligently these past few weeks. I don't think that anyone will fail."

"Oh my. You sound quite confident, Hirata."

Everyone wore a confident look. The teacher promptly took up the test papers and passed them out. Our first period test was for social studies. Out of everything we'd studied, it was probably the easiest subject.

"If anyone stumbles here, the other tests will be an uphill battle, quite frankly. You'll take this midterm and the final exam in July. If no one fails either test, you'll be rewarded with a vacation during your summer break."

"A vacation?"

"That's right. A dream vacation on an island surrounded by the brilliantblue sea."

"Of course, the beach in summer meant we'd be able to see the girls intheir swimsuits..." Ike was daydreaming.

"Wh-what is this strange pressure..." Yamauchi muttered.

They still haven't understood that whatever the school does, it looks good on the surface but there is always a hidden trap. Maybe it will be one of our tests or even the first special test.

Chabashira-sensei stepped back from the obvious tension the students exuded... mostly the boys.

"Everyone. Let's do our best!"

"Yeah!" Ike howled along with our classmates.

Before long, everyone had their test papers. On the teacher's signal, everyone began. I held off on starting for a moment and looked around at the others. With everything they'd learned, could the Idiot company avoid failing?

First off, how many of this test's questions were the same as the ones from the old exam? I needed to check that first.

All right.I discreetly clenched my fist in triumph. The questions here were the same as the old ones. I hadn't looked them over in any detail, but I saw no great difference. If they have memorized what was on the old test, it was clear that they could get a near-perfect score. Glancing around the classroom for assurance, I didn't notice any students looking flustered or confused. I assumed that many of them had engaged in some last-minute studying. Slowly, I went through and answered all of the problems.

The second and third period exams were for Japanese and chemistry, respectively. Then came fourth period. Mathematics. All of the abnormally difficult questions that had been featured on the mock test also appeared here, but the content was the same as the old exams. Even if Sudou and the other guys couldn't understand the problems, they could still apply the answers if they'd memorized them.

Then came the break. The whole class gathered at the front.

"It's an easy victory. We've got this."

"I feel like I might get 120 points."

"Yeah, thank you so much Ayanokouji-kun. The questions were the same as the paper you gave us. Your prediction was totally correct."

"Yeah, I feel like we have a cheat code for victory. With Ayanokouji-kun leading us we will never lose."

"We are invincible." everybody started chanting that. I think it might become the class slogan.

In the midst of all this, I went towards Sodou.

"Sodou, you okay?" he sat alone at his desk and stared fixedly at the old test material. However, Sudou looked sullen.

"Sudou?"

"Huh? Oh, sorry. I'm kind of busy." He didn't look up from the questions as he spoke. He was reviewing the English test material, his forehead covered in a thin layer of sweat.

"Sudou, did you...not study the old test material, by chance?"

"Everything but English. I fell asleep partway through." Sudou sounded irritated. In other words, this was his first time reviewing the material.

That also meant that Sudou only had ten minutes to review.

"Damn, I can't get any of these answers to stick in my head," he muttered. Unlike the other tests, the English problems weren't easy to memorize. Trying to cram all of the answers in just ten minutes would be impossible.

"Sudou-kun, memorize the problems that are worth a lot of points and those with the shortest answers." Horikita leapt up from her seat and moved next to Sudou. It was surprising to see Horikita help somebody. Sodou wasn't even in her study group.

"O-okay." He stopped focusing on the low-point questions and instead zeroed in on what would get him the most points.

"A-are you going to be okay?" While trying to avoid getting in theway, Kushida appeared anxious.

"Unlike Japanese, I don't know the basics of English. These letters look like some kind of magic spell or something. Memorizing it'll take time."

"Y-yeah. I struggle with English, too..."The break passed in the blink of an eye, and the heartless class bellrang. Looks like I have to spend a lot more points than I thought.

"I did all I could. I'll try to answer the questions I remember first, before I forget them."

"Yeah..."

And thus began our English test. While the other students calmly made their way through, Sudou clearly had trouble. Occasionally, he'd stop writing and whack his pen against his head. However, no one could help him now. Whether Sudou sank or swam was entirely up to him. Or up to me.

After the last test ended, a small group gathered around Sodou.

"Hey, did you do okay?" asked Ike, anxiously.

Sudou was on the verge of losing his cool.

"I don't know...I did everything I could, but I have no idea how well I did..."

"Don't worry. You studied as hard as you could. I'm sure you did well."

I left him to wallow in his misery. The class would have gotten enough marks to lift our average high. Even after Sodou brought it down significantly.

It was the day of results. Chabashira-sensei strode into the classroom as usual and raised an eyebrow at me.

"Sensei. We were told that the results would be announced today, but when?"

"There's no need for you to get so worked up, Hirata. You should have passed quite easily."

"So, when will the results be released?"

"Well, if you'd like, now is as good a time as any. If we waited to do it after class, we wouldn't have enough time for other procedures."

Some of the students visibly reacted to the words "other procedures."

"What...do you mean by that?"

"Don't get flustered. I'll tell you now."

As usual, she revealed the details simultaneously and collectively. She stuck a large, white sheet of paper with everyone's names and test scores onto the blackboard.

"Honestly, I'm impressed. I didn't think that you'd score so well. Many students tied with perfect scores in Mathematics, Science Japanese, English and Social Studies. More than ten of you, actually. Whereas other twenty one students got altleast a perfect score in one or two subjects."

"I am happy to announce that Class D had the highest class average amongst all of first year. You beat Class A by a narrow margin , who took second. Third place was taken by Class B. Class C came last." for the first time she actually smiled.

So, Class A did find out about the syllabus thing. Or they just studied everything that was or will be taught in the first year. Even though we had the whole question paper, they still could have beaten us. Well, they are Class A for a reason.

Some of the students shouted in joy and delight when they heard

the results. We saw the 100s lined up on the results sheet. However, some weren't smiling. The only grade that truly mattered was Sudou's score in English.

Then-We saw Sudou's test scores. He had scored seventy-five points in four of the five main subjects, which was considerably high. He'd scored forty six points in English.

"Yes!" Sudou leapt up and shouted with joy. Ike and Yamauchi stood and cheered, too.

There was no red line to be found on the results sheet. Kushida and I shared a glance and she smiled at me with a hidden meaning. My plan was a success.

"We showed you, sensei! When we really try our best, we can do anything!" Ike wore a smug, confident look.

"Yes, I recognize that. You all did very well. However-"Chabashira-sensei held a red pen in her hand.

Sudou unintentionally let out a "Huh?"

She drew a red line right above Sudou's name.

"Wh-what is that? What does that mean?"

"You failed, Sudou."

"Huh? You're lying, right? Don't give me that crap! Why did I fail?" he cried.

Of course, Sudou was the first one to protest this. In response to Sudou's failing grade, the entire classroom did a complete one-eighty.

They stopped there delighted cheering and erupted in confusion.

"Sudou, you failed the English exam. That's all."

"Don't screw with me! I got forty-six points! I passed!"

"When did anyone say that forty-six points was a passing grade?"

"No, no. You said so, sensei! Right, everyone?" shouted Ike.

"Say whatever you want, it won't matter. This is the undeniable truth. You had to score at least a forty seven to pass the midterm exam. In other words, you were just one point short. You were so close."

"F-forty seven?! You never told us about this! I won't accept it!"

"Should I tell you how we determine the passing grade or maybe someone else want to explain?"Chiyabashira-sensei looked at me.

I went to the blackboard and wrote a simple formula : 93.25 divided by 2 equals 46.625."

"The school set a passing grade for each individual class, just as they did for the last test. They calculated that number by dividing the average score by two. That's how we arrived at our answer."

"In other words, anything at 46.625 or lower is considered failing."

"Now that there is proof that you failed. That is all." Chabashira-sensei said.

"No way... So... Does that mean I'm going to be expelled?"

"Although your time here was short, you struggled valiantly. You'll be asked to fill out a withdrawal form after class, but you will need to have a legal guardian present when you do so. I'll contact them for you."

As the class witnessed the scene unfold, the teacher rattling off the information as if she were casually giving a report, they finally realized that this was actually happening.

"As for the rest of you, good work. You all passed without any issues. Work hard so that you can pass your final exam as well. Well then, next-"

"S-sensei. Is Sudou-kun really being expelled? Is there no way to

save him?" Hirata was the first to show concern, even though Sudou hated him and had lashed out at him verbally at various instance.

"He's being expelled. He got a failing grade."

"Could we possibly see Sudou-kun's answer sheet?"

"Even if you look it over, you won't find any grading mistakes. I was expecting that you'd protest." She took out Sudou's English answer sheet and handed it to Hirata, who immediately looked over every problem.

His expression turned dark when he reached the end.

"There...are no mistakes."

"Maybe, Ayanokouji-kun can do something. He is a genius after all." one of the girls said.

"I am glad that you all have so much faith in me, but it's inevitable." I said.

"Ayanokoji, please. Help me." Sodou pleaded.

"Sodou, you should have realized this yourself when you didn't even bother to attend the study sessions. Remember what you said to me when I requested you to study for your own good."

Flashback -

"Sodou, Kushida told me that you were avoiding your study sessions. You have the lowest score out of everybody in our class. If you don't study now, you will be expelled."

"You serious? If the lessons in the class are a pain in my ass, why would studying after class be any better? Besides, I have club activities, so it's pointless. I'll pass. I'll be fine cramming for the test the night before."

"Atleast try a little, even your friends are trying there best and

attending the sessions."

"That's because they are simps. If Kushida wasn't there teacher, they would have been in the same boat."

"OK, I won't deny that. But still they would improve in their academics and you will be expelled."

"Say whatever you want. Academics will be useless in the future, anyway."

"Academics will be useless in the future? That's an interesting argument. How do you justify that?"

"I don't care if I can't solve a math problem in the future. Studying's useless. Aiming to become a pro basketball player will help me a lot more."

"Incorrect. Once you learn to solve these kinds of problems, your entire life will change. In other words, studying increases the possibility that you'll solve the problems you face. It's the same principle as basketball. I wonder if, so far, you've been playing basketball by your own set of rules. When you struggle in basketball, do you run away from it like you do from studying?"

Seriously, this thick headed human has been more of a problem than those professional debater, I was trained against to debate when I was little.

"Do you think you are better than me? You think you have all the girls. Just you wait and watch. Don't come crying to ask my autograph when I am a famous basketball player."

"You know Sodou, you don't interest me in the slightest, but I can tell what kind of person you are just by looking at you. You want to play professional basketball? Do you honestly believe you can make such a childish dream come true in this world? A simpleton like you who gives up right away could never hope to go pro. Furthermore, even if you managed to become a professional player, I doubt you'd earn an annual income sufficient to live on. You're a fool to have such unreasonable aspirations." I took the route of provoking him.

"You!" Sodou, lost control. He threw a punch at me. I immediately caught it.

He looked at me with surprise when I started applying some pressure.

"So, that's your instinctive response. Just hit what you can't understand. You're just going to immediately give up on studying or on school in general? Then discard your dreams of playing basketball and spend your days toiling away at a pitiful part-time job." With every word, I increased the pressure. He was on the verge of crying.

I was done arguing with this guy. Now it's time to show him what happens if he disobey me. I left him there and walked away.

"I am sorry, please." he pleaded.

"Sodou, you are getting the fruit of your own actions. Now how are you going to become a professional basketball player? Who would take a failure in there team?" I said. It was the first time, the class saw me like this. But it was also accounted for. All my pieces will prevent my reputation from taking a hit and They will know that if they follow me, they will see my good side and if they disobey me then.....

"Ayanokouji-kun, I promise that if you save him then from now on Sodou-kun will attend all the classes and study diligently. Won't you Sodou-kun?" Kushida said.

"Yes, Yes anything. Just give me one more chance." it was the lowest Sodou had ever been. From insulting me to begging to me in front of the whole class.

"Maybe, there is a way. But you will owe a serious debt to the whole class. I am not even going to say what it is until you apologize to everybody for the inconvenience you have caused them."

"I am really sorry, everybody. Please forgive me. I promise from

now on I will do my best in the class." he apologized.

"Good. Sensei can you sell us a point to add to Sodou's English marks?" I asked Sae.

Whole class was shocked, they started asking if it was possible.

"Of course, it is possible. Remember, on the first day. Sae-sensei said that we can buy anything in the school premise."

"It will cost you 100,000 points. Can you afford that?"

At this I acted to be saddened. I sighed and said.

"I don't have that many points, I am sorry guys but I can't magically make points appear."

"Don't worry, I would like to contribute. Although I only have 15,000." Hirata said.

"If Hirata-kun and Ayanokouji-kun is contributing then I would too." Kei said.

One by one, whole class contributed. Although the biggest contribution was from Horikita.

Seeing this Sodou muttered, "I think I might be in love with her."

"Hey, didn't you said something about your friends being simp. You are doing the same thing."

At last we had gathered 100,000 points.

"Now we are totally broke, how many points we will get next month sensei." asked Yukimura.

"Because Class D, came first. 100 class points will be added to your prior total which was zero. The second place got 95 points, third got 90 and last place got 85. Although, if anyone from any class was expelled due to getting failed. Then they wouldn't be getting the class points regardless of their ranking."

"So, by saving Sodou we saved 10,000 points each. Thank God, finally we will have some points." said Kei.

The whole class rejoiced.

"Well, if you're all in agreement, homeroom is over." said Sae and left.

"Guys, there still some time left for the first class to start. So I would like to discuss some things." I said to them.

"What is it? Ayanokouji-dono. Your wish is our command." professor did a dramatical bow.

"Actually, it's not my wish but my advice. As you saw, we had to spend a lot of points to save Sodou. But that's not the only way we can save a student from being expelled. I have found another."

"Another way? How do you know so many things?" asked Mori.

"Yes, but it would cost 20 million points. So my advice is that we start an account where all of us would deposit some amount of points each month. So that if there is a situation where we need points to save somebody, we won't have to bleed ourselves dry."

"That's a brilliant idea, Ayanokouji-kun." supported Kushida.

"But we will only get 10,000 points next month. How we will live if we just give them away." protested Ike.

"I am not telling you to give them away this month, we could wait. There still a week left for June. So if we don't loose any points next month. We will get the same points in July. We have our finals in July. Until then our situation will be stable. I expect we will gain some points from the finals. So we will start saving some points from August. Is it okay?"

"It is agreeable, if it saves even one of us from getting expelled. I support it." Hirata said.

Most of the class agreed. After all no one wanted to be in the same position as Sodou.

"That's not all. The study groups were a great success. I don't think we can use the question paper trick again. So we will continue with the sessions. Although, timings would be more flexible and you are free to attend your respective clubs."

"Furthermore, I want to assign some roles in the class. I have prepared a list here-"

I stuck a list on the board.

= =

Leader- Ayanokoji Kiyotaka

Co-leaders- Kushida Kikyou, Matsushita Chiaki

Academic Incharge - Horikita Suzune, Yukimura Teruhiko

Sports incharge - Minami Setsuya, Onodera Kayano

Discipline incharge - Hirata Yousuke, Karuizawa Kei

Extra curricular activities incharge - Okitani Kyousuke, Mori Nene

= =

"These will be the central figures of our class, I hope you all agree with it. No, Ike and Yamauchi. If majority of the class agrees then your opinion won't matter."

"There job would be to improve the class in their respective fields. Like Onodera and Setsuya will be responsible to make our class best in physical activities. Similarly Horikita and Yukimura will be responsible for academic excellence. The leaders of the study groups will now report to them. Yousuke and Kei your job is to prevent losing any class points due to misbehaviour. Mori and Oki, you will keep track of who attends which clubs and encourage people to pursue their hobbies. I need a well rounded class. We should be good in every field."

"You would have noticed that for each field there is a girl and a boy. That's because the boy will be incharge of other boys, same on

the girls side."

"These incharges will regularly report to the co-leaders. That will be all." I said and sat down on my seat.

Efficiency is the key to success, if I had to focus on every little issue then it would be a headache. Assigning the roles was the answer.

Everything went according to the plan from Sodou's failure to the assigning of roles. Although it took me a lot of points to bring Sodou's score to 46 points, he had gotten a measly score of 27. I paid Sae the points before she announced the results. I had given Sodou the English paper with some wrong answers, I wanted him to fail, for him to beg. I wanted to displace him from his high horse. So I predicted the score, whole class would get according to their ability and preparation. Then set the average, according to the average, Sodou would have to get 46, so I purposefully gave him the answers worth 56 points, ten points extra as a cushion because I knew he wouldn't be able to remember everything. But I didn't take Sodou's sleep situation into account so I had to spend more points than I had thought.

Now let's focus on bringing down other classes. This is just the beginning. The main show was yet to start and I couldn't be more excited.

And with that we have reached the end of first volume.

It's nearly been a month since I started this story.

We have already reached 20 parts and nearly 12k views. I just want to thank you all for the support on this story.

There will be two SS from Matsushita and Kushida perspective next.

After that I will begin volume 2.

Please, let me know how you find the story till now. Is it good? Is it bad? Is it average? If you feel that I need to improve in

some area please let me know.

This is the first time writing a fanfiction and I think I have improved since I started. Still a lot more to go.

Volume 2 will have some character introduction, some new plots and I hope you will find the ending of volume 2 as good as I think it is.

That will be all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

SS- The Frenemy

Reads: 1518 | Votes: 61 | Comments: 27

Kushida Kikyou POV

Have you ever felt that you are better than everybody else. I did, till I didn't. It was an addictive feeling. The ecstasy it provided me was unmatched.

I am Kushida Kiyou. I hope you are having a good day.

Oh, who am I fooling. If you are having a bad day then you are getting what you fucking deserve.

I am tired by this angel act. Pretending to be good and helping others all the time. It's a fucking chore.

In my last school, I messed up. My true personality was revealed. The very people who adored me, turned on me. So I returned them the favour.

I never regret what I did. I never felt sorry for them. That weakling who committed suicide just because I revealed how big of a pussy he was. Pathetic.

Therefore, I decided to start again. I wanted to feel that affection, everybody's praise. All of it again.

So, I enrolled in the Tokyo Metropolitan Advanced Nurturing Highschool. I thought it would be easy. Graduating from this school. Getting a guaranteed job, marrying a rich guy. My life would be the best.

Enter Ayanokoji Kiyotaka.

When I first saw him on the bus. He wasn't any different from others. Yes, he did offer his seat to the old lady. But I passed it as

simple courtesy. Then I find out that he was in my class.

But still I never saw him as someone special. Yes, he was smart and knew how to make friends. But my focus was on one black haired bitch.

When he used to hangout with us, all the girls used to die on him. It was really annoying. They paid him more attention than me.

Then he dropped the bomb. Finding out that this school was not what it seems, I felt betrayed. But still if I maintained my act, all would be great.

But that little shit. He assigned me the worst students in my study group. I admit, I often use my body as a weapon to lure in some boys to do what I want. But those perverts, always staring at my boobs and butt.

Every time, I would feel like killing them slowly. My stress level increased, I became careless. That's when he struck.

He called me to an isolated place, set up a whole act, just to rile me up. For the first time in my life, I experienced how it feels to played with emotionally. He pretended he would commit suicide. Just like that pussycat in my old school.

Then he blackmailed me with my only weakness. But one thing he promised was he would protect me. He would encourage me.

I always thought if someone knew the real me, they would hate me. But here was a guy who called me his queen, knowing who I am.

Maybe, I finally found someone who I could talk to without being fake. After all, he was the same as me. He was also putting up an act of being a good guy.

As days passed by and I saw how he thinks and acts. I was convinced that this guy was a real piece of shit, just like me and I loved him for it.

I think he might have the power to predict the future, because everything he said would come true. If you see one of his

machinations. You would feel like you are in a movie. Where he is the director, writer and main character at the same time.

Everybody, unknowingly do what he wants, they say what he wants and they act like he wants.

I was convinced that only a fool would want to be his opponent. That is why, I decided that I would do whatever he wants me to. I would be his most important piece, his queen. That's the only way for a happy ending. Who knows, I might even gain my first real friend or something more.

We would rule this school together as the King and Queen.

"Kushida, what are you thinking? You have that evil grin on your face." the devil I was just thinking about said to me.

"What are you doing? Why are you asleep on my lap?"

I didn't even notice him do that. We were sitting at our usual spot behind the third year dorms building.

"I was tired by today's hard work and these thighs looked really inviting." he said.

"What! Do you know how wrong that sounds? You shouldn't say that to any girl."

"You aren't any girl, you are my queen and I deserve to take a nap in my queen's lap."

Was my face heating up? This idiot doesn't even know what he is saying. I guess I can let him rest, he did do some hardwork. Totally not because I want him to sleep on me.

"Do I not deserve anything, I too did hardwork. Do you think it is easy dealing with those motherfuckers." I complained.

"You want to take a nap in my lap?"

"No!.... Okay but not because I want to, just because you told me to."

He lifted his head from my lap and sat straight. I was a little saddened by it but then I put my head in his lap. Suddenly I felt a hand on my head. It patted me!

"Kiyotaka, what the fuck are you doing?" Don't blush, don't blush. Damn it.

"I read that headpatting is a way of rewarding someone for their good work. Am I wrong?"

"Yes, No. Whatever, just continue doing it."

"My little devil is in a bad mood, something those clowns did. Should I go and beat them up for you? "

I never felt such warmth in my life, what is happening to me.

Yeah, I had a rough childhood. My parents never loved me, they never showed affection towards me. But it doesn't mean, I will spread my legs to the first guy who appreciates the real me.

Ugh, sometimes I do hate myself. I hate even the kindest of human beings but I feel affection towards a guy who uses me like his puppet.

Maybe one day, he will feel the same for me. Who am I kidding, this dumbo doesn't even feel anything for me. Our relationship is transactional not emotional.

Isn't it pathetic, one more person in my life. Who only wants me because I am useful. Will there ever be someone who would truly love me?

I made her backstory a little more emotional. Although it just basic unappreciating parent stuff but we never know why she is, the way she is.

How did you like the fluff, even though she is not the pairing. I decided to give the Kushida fans some treat.

It will be the same with all the other girls who are not selected to be the pairing. Nobody will go empty. I think Cote is a world where all the female character have potential. I would be a fool to not give them chance.

Next will be Matsushita SS. It would be about Kiyotaka learning how to cook.

Important notice the poll for secondary pairing will end tomorrow. Currently it's a close match between Asahina and Arisu. So don't forget to vote. After that I will not change the pairing.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day.

SS-The Anomaly

Reads: 1431 | Votes: 65 | Comments: 21

Matsushita Chiaki POV-

An anomaly, that's what he is. He is extraordinary, that's what he is. He is a wolf in sheep's clothing, that's what he is. I don't think there are any words to describe him.

Since, I was little. I was loved by my parents. I had a happy life. I would do well in academics and sports and my parents would spoil me with gifts. I didn't had many friends, due to my talents. People would think of me as someone too good to even talk. I was special amongst averages.

But my parents were my everything and I was there pride, there princess. So when they enrolled me in the Tokyo Metropolitan Advanced Nurturing Highschool. I was a little sad. Staying away from them for three years, without any contact.

So, I decided to pretend to be an average student. In that way, I will at least gain some friends and will not have to live alone for next three years.

But that plan went to dumpster, when I saw him. He was special. For the first time in my life, I had met someone as talented as me. No, more talented. I was baffled by his observation skills. When he figured out the school system in a day. It was like Christmas came early for me.

I had found someone, who could outmatch me in every field. For the first, I didn't feel alone.

As days passed by, our friendship grew. I still smile thinking about the first time when he came to my room, to learn about cooking. Seeing how clueless he was, I had genuine fun with someone of my

age for the first time.

First day of training -

"Ayanokouji-kun, do you know anything about cooking? You cannot add that much salt to the food."

"But, the tutorials said to add salt according to one's taste." he said innocently.

"It doesn't mean you should empty the whole salt into the soup."

"I was experimenting, how it would taste if I add a lot of salt and sugar. Would it be too salty or too sweet."

I sighed. "You're hopeless. Now don't waste my resources. Follow what I do."

Ninth day of training -

I was bathing when I smelled burning smoke.

I instantly wrapped a towel around me and ran to the kitchen.

"Kiyotaka, why is my kitchen on fire?"

"I was wondering if I burn this steak until it becomes ash, will it's taste differ from the ashes of potatoes?"

"Kiyotaka, this is my kitchen. Not your chemistry lab. I swear if you try to experiment one more time, I will not give you any dinner."

He nodded instantly and then left the kitchen like a child scolded by his parents. I felt bad so I decided to made a special dinner for him.

"Uh, would you be mad if I said that you are naked."

Surprised I look down and saw that my towel had fallen open while running towards the kitchen.

"E-ep. Look away right now." I shouted at him.

"And you are mad."

These type of chaos were some common occurrence in our friendship. He would come to my room at 8 pm and we would cook together. Then we would watch some movies while having dinner. He would leave before 11 pm.

Although, if I had to choose the moment I fell for him. Then I would say second week of the school. It 14th April, my mother's birthday. It was the first time I couldn't be with her on her birthday. I was having a bad day. It was raining outside and my mood was down.

The door bell rang. I lifted myself from the bed and opened the door. It was my 'apparent' childhood friend.

"Hey, Kiyotaka. I am really not in the mood to cook today. Can you buy your dinner from the cafeteria today."

"You are not in the mood for cooking, but are you in the mood for eating the Kiyotaka special meal." he said cheerfully and showed me the package he was carrying.

"You cooked all by yourself?" I asked, my jaw dropped.

"Okay, there is no need to be surprised. I learned from you."

"Judging by my past experiences, I am dreading to eat your food."

"Now you are being ungrateful. I saw that you were in a bad mood today, so as your childhood friend. I cooked special dinner for you and that's how you repay."

"I am grateful, but you and I both know, you are being dramatic."

He entered the kitchen and took out cutlery set and made the table for dinner.

As I sat on my seat, he opened the boxes and I was hit with a mouthwatering smell. I couldn't believe my eyes.

Temaki-zushi, Miso-soup, Rice, Tempura and finally The Castella cake. It was like a feast for special occasions. I was speechless for

quite a while.

"You know, you can't eat the food just by looking at it." he broke the silence.

"Did you buy this from a restaurant or you actually cooked? I don't think any beginner can make such cuisine."

"It is what it is, I tend to learn things quickly. After getting the basics of cooking, it is easy to make any dish with the help of the internet."

"But why did you make all of this?"

"It's your mother's birthday, isn't it?"

"I never mentioned anything about it in our conversations."

"You see, my algorithm actually reveals a lot of personal information. Before you lecture I know it is very wrong. But I used it for good."

"This one time, just don't go creeping into my personal information."

"Oh, I forgot to mention that you can send a gift to your mother. Just tell what you want to send and it will be delivered."

"But isn't outside contact forbidden?"

"It is for others. I am the owner of the biggest store in the school. With one message, I can buy a whole house outside the school."

"Thanks for doing so much for me. I am really grateful." I never thought that a guy I met less than a month ago would go to such lengths for me.

The evening was well spent, later he revealed that he also bought some alcohol from his sources. We never noticed when we were drunk. The next thing we knew was that waking up in the morning. He was sleeping on the bed beside me, fortunately or unfortunately fully clothed and I had the worst headache of my entire life.

Since then we never spoke about that incident.

I just hope that in future, I get to experience more of these.

Hence ends the two SS,

Please let me know how you find both of them. I tried to give some backstory to both of the girls.

Next chapter will be the beginning of volume 2.

If you feel like Ayanokoji was out of character in these short stories, then good. You are also being manipulated.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day

Volume 2 - Prologue

Reads: 1357 | Votes: 66 | Comments: 7

THE COLOUR.

The color that spread across my field of vision.

The first thing I remember was equally as white.

As the name White Room implies, this facility is based on the color white. The ceiling is no exception.

I was staring at that white ceiling in my first memory. Before showing any interest in staring or playing with my fingertips, I simply wondered what this white ceiling was.

Day after day, I spent more and more time just staring at that ceiling.

At first, I cried. I cried because I missed people, and then I learned that no one was coming to help me.

Now that I look back on it, it was instinct, not logic.

This is the first thing a newborn baby, who cannot even speak, learns when it accepts its environment.

After that, I realized the existence of my fingers. I spent all day long looking at, sucking, and licking my little fingers, and nothing else, in the emptiness.

The nourishment necessary for life was brought to us by the cold adults. This is no different in the case of illness.

The treatment was carried out without hesitation, and daily life returned as if nothing had happened.

No one panicked, no one worried, no one rejoiced. Eventually, you learn. You realized that you're being carefully cared for here.

Human beings have feelings of joy, anger, sorrow, and pleasure. But none of them are of much use in this facility.

The children, with their still undeveloped brains, learned that early on. No wonder. Whether you laugh or cry, get angry or sad, the instructors weren't there to help you.

The only time I could move forward was when I achieved something.

Then I **woke up.**

Sakura Airi's Soliloquy -

I don't know how to interact with other people. I'm bad at talking while making eye contact.

I'm horrible with crowds. I don't remember how or when I became so hopeless.

However, one thing I do know for certain is that a person cannot live entirely in isolation.

No matter how much I may love my solitude, I can't remain totally by myself.

So, I came up with a solution. I would adopt a false face and hide my true self.

Then, I wouldn't be completely honest, but I could be a version of myself. I could continue to live in this dark, lonely world.

The world isn't entirely beautiful. Everyone knows this, but in their hearts they still wish for that perfect, idyllic place.

A bit of a contradiction. I don't care who answers me, but I need to know.

Is everyone else putting on a façade, just like me?

Or do most people show their true selves to the outside world?

Since I can't connect with people, I suppose there's no way for me to find out the answer.

Therefore, I remain alone. I'm all right by myself. I'm all right with being alone.

I…I want to connect with someone from the bottom of my heart. And so I will continue to live quietly, with my eyes downcast.

Alone.

It has been exactly one month since I started writing this story.

Here is the prologue of volume 2, the first chapter will be released tomorrow at the same time.

Just to let you know Asahina Nazuna (16 votes) has beaten Arisu Sakayanagi (14 votes). So the pairing for the first year would be Asahina Nazuna.

I wouldn't have minded either. But to be honest, I like to write something new. So I am satisfied with the results.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-2 Ch-1 The Date

Reads: 1992 | Votes: 60 | Comments: 33

All warfare is based on deception.

-Sun Tzu

_____

"Hey, Asahina-senpai. So, are you ready?" I waved to the beautiful senior standing in front of me.

It was more than a month since our mid terms. We had recieved 10,000 private points for the month. There was a lot of improvement on the spending habits of my classmates.

They continue to improve their behavior too. We only lost 5 class points due to the idiot company, who were getting very popular in a bad way.

Finally, getting a free weekend. I invited Asahina for the date, which was due.

"You know it's quite rude to keep your date waiting. Moreover, you didn't even compliment your date's look. How will you ever hope to go on a date with your girlfriend in the future." she said with a wink and her tongue stuck out.

She looked gorgeous in her casual attire wearing a blue skirt with a matching blue blouse. I was pretty sure, many people were looking at us. Especially me, it is rare for a first year boy to be seen with a second year girl.

"Do you ever need to say that sun rises from the east and falls in the west, or the earth revolves around the sun. It's an universal fact. Just like Asahina Nazuna is the most beautiful girl. Only a fool would disagree." I winked back at her.

"Ayanokouji-kun, you are quite the charmer, aren't you?" she was red from top to bottom. Then she punched me.

"Anyways, this is my first time on a date. So I would leave it to you, to decide where to go."

"It's my first date too, I guess we both are novices. But if I were to suggest anything, we should go to the arcade in the Keyaki mall. I heard they have added some new machines." she said with excitement.

"That's quite different from what I was expecting. I have heard that usually girls like to go shopping or watch a rom-com movie." I commented.

"Then forget all the stereotypes when you are with me. I like to enjoy in a different way. Although, I would like to watch a comedy movie." she said, although there was a sudden change in her expression.

Hence commenced, my first experience of a date with a girl.

We played games like Space Invaders, Donkey Kong, Ms. Pac-man. We spent a whole hour in their. I genuinely enjoyed it. Seeing Asahina-senpai smile like a maniac was wonderful.

Our next stop was Karaoke booth. Asahina interestingly chose a song named highway to hell by AC/DC. All her song choices were rock or heavy metal. Her choices were today were very different from what internet-sensei suggested.

Then we bought tickets to a comedy movie, bought some popcorn bucket and two soft drinks. The movie took two and a half hour. By the time we were exiting, Asahina-senpai had tears in her eyes due to laughing.

Then we finally sat down for dinner at the garden restaurant, on the top floor of the mall.

We ordered cheap food, I expected her to order someting expensive when I said it would be my treat. But she took my economical condition into account.

Sadly she didn't knew that the restaurant we were eating in was 40% owned by me. When I started getting heavy profits from One Stop. I started invested my money into all the major business present in the mall.

This was for two reasons. First, I wanted to have a backup source of income if something happened to the store and Second reason is a secret.

While eating dinner, I tried to make small talk.

"Asahina-senpai, can I ask you a question?"

"Only if you call me just Nazuna, there is no need to be so formal." I accepted.

"At the start of our date. You said that you never went on a date before. I can't believe that, I mean someone as beautiful as you should have been asked out by every boy in second year."

"Will you stop complimenting me in every statement." she said turning her head away.

"But it's true, whenever I try to talk with some guy or even a girl trying to make friends. They just avoid me, they run away like they are scared of something. There was this guy, he was from Class C. He took an interest in me. We used to talk a lot. He even indirectly tried to ask me out. But then one day, he too started avoiding me. He stopped talking or even looking at me. Only Fūka-chan is my friend in the entire school." she said with a sad face.

I had an inkling of what was happening here. Judging by Nagumo's expressions that day and the fact that two second year students have been following us since our date started.

"I expected you to do the same, when you didn't contact me for a month."

At this point, I got up and gave her a hug. I truly felt bad for her. Her normal high school life was destroyed because a arrogant bastard had taken an interest in her.

Nagumo was the one, who was stopping anyone from dating or even being friends with Nazuna. He wanted to make her feel alone, to break her self confidence. Then he would swoop in and save her from others. In the process making her his girlfriend.

Although, it was a devious plan. I had no rights to criticize him. After all, I am doing the same with my class. But the difference is that I am confident that I could get a girlfriend without literally manipulating her into thinking that only I accept her in the entire world.

"Maybe, it's because how I behave or how I look. You said that our date was much different from a normal date. Maybe because I don't like romantic movies or I don't like shopping like other girls. Is that the reason. I don't know. Am I scary? Is something wrong with me?" she started crying on my shoulder.

"No, there's nothing wrong with you. Do you think whatever I said for the past few hours was a lie. If your classmates can't see, how amazing you are then tell them to visit an ophthalmologist."

I comforted her, intentionally hugging her tight and rubbing her back for the second years to see.

"One more thing, I would never leave you or avoid you. You can trust me."

Nagumo you may have succeeded in your goal to break her self belief. But I will take advantage of that and build her back up.

"I am sorry, I ruined the date didn't I?" she said lifting her head and rubbing her moist eyes.

"No worries, just talk to me whenever you want to. Also I apologize for making you feel like I abandoned you. I was quite busy, for the entirety of last month."

"It's okay, I am glad that I have another friend now."

"Friends? I thought I might get lucky tonight." I teased her.

"Ayanokouji-kun, you might still get lucky. The luck of experiencing

this punch." then she punched me.

"You know you should stop doing that or I will have some serious bruises tomorrow." I said by rubbing at my arm.

"Oh, don't be such a wuss. Ayanokouji-kun."

It was good to see her back in a good mood.

"Hey, I am calling you Nazuna, aren't I? So just call me Kiyotaka."

Soon, we finished our food and the bill arrived. I offered to pay the bill but she ordered me to split it. Who am I to deny her wishes?

Before ending our date, I suggested a walk to my favorite spot and she agreed.

The cool breeze provided some relief after a hot day. We walked with a comfortable silence.

I then did what Nagumo could only dream about. I held hands with Nazuna.

At first she was surprised but then she held my hand tighter.

Is this how it feels to have someone by your side, because as much as I liked walking this road alone. I couldn't deny that tiny feeling of warmth in me that was blossoming.

It has been nearly three months, since I started at this school. Nearly a year and a half since leaving that place. But I can say that I have changed considerably. Maybe for the better.

I can only pray to whoever might listen, that one day when I look back at this moment. I have no regrets.

It was the Monday morning of the last week of June. The temperature has been steadily rising and standing outside of the air conditioned school building was the worst.

But here I was standing, waiting for Chiaki. I needed to discuss

something important with her.

When I thought I would have to change my uniform due to the amount of sweat that had been released. She finally arrived.

"Hey, sorry I am late. I was pretty tired last night because of you and overslept." she said.

A group of girls standing nearby gasped hearing this. Then they started to giggle.

"Chiaki, please mind what you are saying. It can be taken out of context." I dragged her to an isolated place while talking.

"What, Oh! I didn't mean like that. Anyways did you receive the PDF, I sent?"

"Yes, are you sure that is all. Or there are more left."

"Those are all. You know it wouldn't take much for you to say a thank you to me and Karuizawa. We did lot of hardwork to attain this information." she complained with a pout.

"When did I ever said I am not thankful. Also give Karuizawa my thanks. Now, moving on. What about your other task. Is that going okay?"

"Yep, but I have been doing that for a month and till now nothing has happened. Maybe, your prediction is wrong?"

"Now, that you have finished the first task. Focus fully on the second one. That will be all. Let's go to the classroom." I finished. I ignored her question.

As we entered the class. Thankfully, Sae haven't arrived yet. The class was in a good mood. Especially Ike and Yamauchi were muttering something about being the first to get a girlfriend.

I ignored them and took my seat and opened my phone to the pre-installed school app. On it the balance enquiry showed a measly 22,000 points. I haven't had the need to transfer some points from my other points account.

I then went to the class points section. It displayed the class points for the month of June.

= =

Class A- 1035 CP
Class B- 640 CP
Class C- 575 CP
Class D- 95 CP

= =

Class A had a ridiculous lead of 395 points on Class B, who were the only class who lost points since the S system was announced.

I asked Amikura who has become one of my good friends from Class B due to her nature about the reason for this.

"Soon, after the point system was revealed the Class C students started tailing us, picking fights and harassing the members of our class in a way that there was no proof. It took a mental hit on our class environment. People lost focus, they were several cases of absence. It was bad for quite a while, although now Honami-chan has handled it." Amikura had said.

Due to this Class C has closed the gap with Class B. Class D is still living on the points we earned from the mid terms.

"Hello, Ayanokouji-kun." my neighbor greeted me.

"Hello, Suzune. Even after all this time. It's still weird when you greet me voluntarily."

She just opened the book that she was reading yesterday and ignored me. Even after that incident, Suzune and my relationship has been rocky. But she has grown a lot.

It is a miracle that she has her own friends group. Well to be honest, it's her study group. But beggars can't be choosers.

Sae entered the classroom with her stern look. At once, the whole class became silent.

""Is everyone present?" asked our homeroom instructor Chabashira, the exact moment the bell rang.

As our morning homeroom began, she stood at the teacher's podium with a serious expression on her face. That, coupled with the fact that we didn't have any classes for first and second period today, made me predict something was going to happen. Apparently, this brief moment of peace was about to come to an end.

"Don't tell me our class points dropped to zero again." said Ike. Which earned him a lot of glares from everyone.

"I'm sure you would be worried about that, but before we get into any discussion, there's something I'd like for you to do. Something that will be particularly important to how you lead your lives here at this school in the future," said Chabashira.

She took out her cell phone, continuing to speak while showing it to us.

"Please take out your phones and place them on your desk, everyone. If anyone has forgotten their phone, I ask that you go and retrieve it immediately... But it seems as though no one has forgotten their phone," said Chabashira.

Cell phones were essential everyday items. You might even say they were the most important objects of all, being something you kept on you at all times.

Before long, Chabashira had verified that all forty phones had been placed out on the desks. She resumed speaking once more.

"First, I'd like you all to go to the school's official website and install a new application. It should be available for download at this time. Though the official name for the app is 'Overall Ability,' it will just show up as 'OAA' on your phone after you've installed it," explained Chabashira.

After following along with what Chabashira told us. I installed the app on my phone. It created an icon that had both the acronym "OAA" on it as well as what looked like an illustration of the school.

"After you've finished installing the app, please put down your phones. Please raise your hand if there's something you're having

trouble understanding."

The process was quite simple. Everyone was used to handling a phone, so no one struggled with this, and things proceeded smoothly.

"You Class D students aren't the only ones being asked to install this app. Right now, everyone in school, across every grade level, is being asked to do so. This app is truly remarkable. It will certainly benefit the students of the Advanced Nurturing High School in a multitude of ways in the days to come. But 'seeing is believing,' as they say, so please boot up the app," said Chabashira.

I tapped the icon and launched the app. Interestingly, the home window displayed the text 'Developed and Property of Nagumo Miyabi'

"Sensei, is this app created by the vice president?" I asked.

"Yes, he is the one who proposed this idea last year. Although, with the help of the school. He took the challenge of creating the app on his own." Sae said.

So he must be a pretty good programmer as well. This makes my plans so much easier.

"By scanning your student ID with your camera, the initial setup will be completed automatically," explained Chabashira.

Following her instructions, I held my student ID card out in front of the camera. It scanned the information on it, like my profile photo and student ID number, then continued the login process.

"Now, you should all have successfully created your own individual accounts. Moving forward, you won't need to log in anymore. But because your account is tied to your phone, we do ask that you take extra care not to lose it."

After finishing the login process, several different options were displayed.

"This app holds personal data for the entire school. For example, if

you select First-Year Class D, your names will be displayed, in standard order. Try it out," said Chabashira.

Sure enough, profile pictures and full names for all Forty students were displayed, in order.

"You are free to look at any profile, but it would probably be a good idea for you to tap on your own name first," said Chabashira.

I tapped on my name, just as she had suggested. I had expected that I'd see only basic information like my date of birth, but that didn't seem to be the case. What was displayed were items and number values that I haven't ever seen before.

= =

1-D Ayanokouji Kiyotaka

Academic Ability: A+ (100)

Physical Ability: A (90)

Adaptability: A- (84)

Societal Contribution: A- (89)

Overall Ability: A (91)

= =

"S-Sensei, uh, my results look like they've kind of turned into, like, stats in a video game or something!" shouted Ike.

"That's right. These are your own individual performance scores, calculated by the school based on your achievements through your results in the first three months at this school. You aren't the only class who is able to access this information. It's possible for students to view performance scores for students in other classes as well. In fact, any student in any grade level can do so. This system was adopted because it was deemed to be important for the future of your education," said Chabashira.

In other words, the app's purpose was to provide an overview of everyone's individual performance scores, represented as numerical data. It also seemed like it could be used to send public messages to all students.

There was a question mark in the upper-right part of the screen, along with the word "Description." When I pressed it, detailed information about each item was displayed.

Academic Ability: Calculated mainly based on scores on written exams, etc., given throughout the year.

Physical Ability: Calculated based on evaluations from physical education classes, activity in clubs, and evaluations from ******* exams, etc.

Adaptability: Calculated based on your ability to adapt to society around you. This includes things such as how many friends you have, your position in your social circle and your communication skills, whether you can think on your feet, etc.

Societal Contribution: Calculated based on a variety of factors, such as your attitude in class, including any lateness or absences on your record, whether you've exhibited any problematic behavior, contributions made to the school via membership on the student council, etc.

Overall Ability: Student's overall abilities are derived from the four values above. However, the effect that the Social Contribution score has on this calculation is reduced by half.

*__Note__: Method for calculating overall ability(Academic Ability + Physical Ability + Adaptability + Social Contribution x 0.5) ÷ 350 x 100 (Rounded up to the nearest whole number)

I see based on the criteria, it would make sense for 100 in academic ability, since I haven't lost a single mark in any of the tests given, as well as in entrance exam.

For physical ability, many physical activity classes had been organized in the last three months, including that swimming class

and I performed considerably well in all of them.

Adaptability and Societal contribution score was boosted due to me being the class representative, as well as being a part of many friend groups. I think figuring out the S system also helped in adaptability.

"Right now, only the scores for your first three months are displayed. Your new evaluations will be given to you as they are assessed by the school, the scores being updated as time goes on. Scores will be updated at the beginning of the month, just like with Class Points."

A handy tool for checking grades... Well, no. There was no way that was all there was to it. It was obvious this was going to play some kind of key role.

Although, it will be tough for the people whose OAA scores are bad. They will be disgraced and laughed upon, regardless of their class.

On the bright side, it would also motivate them to improve individually.

After checking the OAA scores, I found out that I had the highest OAA score in the entire first year. That too by a long margin. After me, the second place was occupied by Hirata at 81, the third place was taken by Chiaki (80) and fourth by Kushida (78). Fifth was tied between Ichinose Honami and Katsuragi Kōhei at 72.

Which means the top four students in the first years are all from Class D. Although we had a bunch of students who had the lowest OAA ratings in the whole school.

If I consider all the years then I am third overall. Nagumo Miyabi with 92 and Horikita Manabu with 95 were the second and first respectively.

In terms of pure academic ability, I was the first in whole school followed by Horikita Manabu (97) and interestingly Kiryuin Fūka (96) were second and third.

Maybe just for fun, I will set a challenge to maintain this perfect

100 till I graduate from this school. It would be a fun way to stove off boredom.

"Hey, look Ayanokouji-kun have the best ratings in our year and second is Hirata-kun. We have the two best students in our class." said Shinohara.

"Don't forget about Matsushita-chan and Kushida-chan. They are third and fourth as well." said Mori.

"But we also have the students with worst ratings in the entire school as well. Yamauchi set the record with the score of 27." said Yukimura.

"Not only you guys are making us lose class points, you are being a stain on our class name as well." commented Nishimura.

"Hey, don't blame us. This app is rigged. We should have the best scores. Doesn't it knows that I played basketball at the highest level." Yamauchi boasted.

"You said baseball team, Yamauchi. At least remember your own lies." said Minami.

"I agree with them. This app is definitely rigged." I said.

"What are you saying Ayanokouji-kun? You think they are right?" Satou asked.

Yamauchi sent me a grateful look.

"Absolutely, how can the app be not rigged. It still shows a rating of 27 for Yamauchi. It should have been 0, how can they?"

At this, the whole class started laughing. It was very reminiscent of our first day at school.

"That will be all, please review the app thoroughly and a gentle reminder that there is only four weeks left for your finals, so study hard." Sae said and left.

I called professor and gestured him to come near.

"What is it, Kiyotaka-dono? Do you need your humble servant for something?"

"Yes, do you know why Ike and Yamauchi are so happy today?"

"Oh, that. For the first time in their life girls talked to them."

"Who did? Who can take interest in them!" Miyake said.

"Some girls from Class C named Yajima and Okabe."

I instantly got up and went towards Ike and Yamauchi.

"You know that it's a trap right?" I asked them.

"What are you talking about?" Yamauchi said.

"The Class C girls are a bait to catch you off-guard. If you pursue this route then it won't end well for you." I warned them.

"Oh shut up, you are just jealous that we will get a girlfriend before you." Ike said.

I didn't bother anymore with them. It would be a waste of time.

"Professor, include Okitani into this and follow them everywhere. I want them under surveillance, all the time."

"As you say, Kiyotaka-dono."

I sat in my seat and gave the matter some thought.

So you want to play Ryūen. Let's see if you can keep up.

But with the introduction of OAA, things are bound to get interesting.

Back with a big one.

Volume 2 has started with a big difference. I introduced the OAA early because of some plans in the future.

Remember the quote at the starting. It contains big hint for this volume.

How was the date with Asahina. Yes, I made Nagumo even worse than the canon. But he is more competent.

I will be releasing a chapter containing OAA of some major characters so if you want to check that out.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day

OAA

Reads: 1316 | Votes: 45 | Comments: 18

1-D Ayanokouji Kiyotaka

Academic Ability: A+ (100)
Physical Ability: A (90)
Adaptability: A- (84)
Societal Contribution: A (89)
Overall Ability: A (91)

3-A Horikita Manabu

Academic Ability: A+ (97)
Physical Ability: A+ (96)
Adaptability: A (93)
Societal Contribution: A+ (96)
Overall Abilty: A (95)

2-A Nagumo Miyabi

Academic Ability: A (89)
Physical Ability: A (87)
Adaptability: A+ (96)
Societal Contribution: A+ (98)
Overall Abilty: A (92)

2-B Kiryuin Fūka

Academic Ability: A+ (96)
Physical Ability: A+ (98)
Adaptability: D (35)
Societal Contribution: C+ (60)
Overall Abilty: B (72)

2-A Asahina Nazuna

Academic Ability: C+ (58)
Physical Ability: B- (61)
Adaptability: D (30)
Societal Contribution: B (67)
Overall Abilty: C (52)

1-D Hirata Yousuke

Academic Ability: A (88)
Physical Ability: B+ (79)
Adaptability: B (75)
Societal Contribution: A- (85)
Overall Abilty: A- (81)

1-D Kushida Kikyou

Academic Ability: A (86)
Physical Ability: C+ (60)
Adaptability: A- (82)
Societal Contribution: A (88)
Overall Abilty: B+ (78)

1-D Matsushita Chiaki

Academic Ability: A (92)
Physical Ability: B (73)
Adaptability: B+ (77)
Societal Contribution: B+ (76)
Overall Abilty: B+ (80)

1-B Ichinose Honami

Academic Ability: A (86)
Physical Ability: C (54)
Adaptability: B (70)
Societal Contribution: A (89)
Overall Abilty: B (72)

1-A Sakayanagi Arisu

Academic Ability: A (95)
Physical Ability: D- (25)

Adaptability: A- (85)
Societal Contribution: B- (65)
Overall Abilty: B (68)

1-C Ryūen Kakeru

Academic Ability: C+ (59)
Physical Ability: A (90)
Adaptability: B (70)
Societal Contribution: E+ (18)
Overall Abilty: B- (65)

1-D Horikita Suzune

Academic Ability: A- (85)
Physical Ability: B (72)
Adaptability: C- (42)
Societal Contribution: C+ (58)
Overall Abilty: B- (65)

1-D Kouenji Rokusuke

Academic Ability: A (95)
Physical Ability: A (90)
Adaptability: D- (24)
Societal Contribution: D- (25)
Overall Abilty: B- (63)

1-A Katsuragi Kōhei

Academic Ability: A (89)
Physical Ability: C+ (56)
Adaptability: B (70)
Societal Contribution: B+ (76)
Overall Abilty: B (72)

1-B Kanzaki Ryūji

Academic Ability: B+ (79)
Physical Ability: B (75)
Adaptability: C+ (60)
Societal Contribution: B (69)

Overall Abilty: B (71)

1-C Shiina Hiyori

Academic Ability: A (92)
Physical Ability: D (28)
Adaptability: C- (42)
Societal Contribution: B (75)
Overall Abilty: C+ (57)

1-D Yukimura Teruhiko

Academic Ability: A (92)
Physical Ability: D+ (40)
Adaptability: B- (61)
Societal Contribution: B- (63)
Overall Abilty: B- (64)

1-D Yamauchi Haruki

Academic Ability: E (15)
Physical Ability: D- (25)
Adaptability: C- (42)
Societal Contribution: D (27)
Overall Abilty: D (27)

1-D Karuizawa Kei

Academic Ability: B- (64)
Physical Ability: C- (44)
Adaptability: B- (67)
Societal Contribution: C (47)
Overall Abilty: C+ (57)

1-D Ken Sudo

Academic Ability: E (13)
Physical Ability: A (90)
Adaptability: C- (42)
Societal Contribution: D- (25)
Overall Abilty: C- (45)

1-D Sakura Airi

Academic Ability: C (50)
Physical Ability: D- (25)
Adaptability: E+ (17)
Societal Contribution: D- (25)
Overall Abilty: C- (41)

1-D Ike Kanji

Academic Ability: E+ (20)
Physical Ability: B (70)
Adaptability: C+ (60)
Societal Contribution: D (32)
Overall Abilty: C (47)

1-D Shinohara Satsuki

Academic Ability: D+ (38)
Physical Ability: C- (41)
Adaptability: C+ (57)
Societal Contribution: C- (44)
Overall Abilty: C- (45)

1-D Miyamoto Soshi

Academic Ability: E+ (17)
Physical Ability: D- (22)
Adaptability: C- (45)
Societal Contribution: D (35)
Overall Abilty: D (29)

1-D Hondou Ryoutaru

Academic Ability: E+ (20)
Physical Ability: D (31)
Adaptability: C- (44)
Societal Contribution: D (29)
Overall Abilty: D (31)

1-D Sotomura Hideo

Academic Ability: B (71)
Physical Ability: D (29)
Adaptability: C (51)
Societal Contribution: C+ (60)
Overall Abilty: C (52)

1-D Miyake Akito

Academic Ability: B (68)
Physical Ability: B+ (78)
Adaptability: C- (42)
Societal Contribution: C+ (56)
Overall Abilty: B- (62)

1-D Satou Maya

Academic Ability: C+ (59)
Physical Ability: D+ (36)
Adaptability: C+ (59)
Societal Contribution: C (51)
Overall Abilty: C (51)

1-D Wang Mei-yu

Academic Ability: A (89)
Physical Ability: C (51)
Adaptability: C- (44)
Societal Contribution: B+ (77)
Overall Abilty: B- (64)

1-D Mori Nene

Academic Ability: C+ (60)
Physical Ability: C (51)
Adaptability: B- (61)
Societal Contribution: B (71)
Overall Abilty: C+ (59)

These are the OAA after the three months not the final OAA score.

Although, I have taken some from the official source. Most of them are changed, according to my story.

The academic ability is high for the Class D because of their mid terms results. So don't be mad that Matsushita's score is more than Ichinose.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-2 Ch-2 The Trap

Reads: 1434 | Votes: 60 | Comments: 7

"So, is this better or the one before. Kiyotaka, are you even paying attention?" said Karuizawa with a pout.

"Obviously, I would say this one is better." I replied.

Karuizawa and I were on a friendly date. Before today, we just used to eat lunch on Sundays in my room. But today Karuizawa wanted to visit One Stop.

But I had to suffer because the reason for the visit was to buy me some new clothes. Apparently, my fashion sense was so bad that she was ashamed to call me her friend.

It was the first of July and our points would be deposited tomorrow.

While I was standing in fancy clothes, which I myself didn't know when to wear it. I received a call from Sodou.

I looked at Kei, who was busy talking with the woman showing us clothes. I picked up the phone.

"Hello, Ayanokoji meet me at your room. It's important." he said in an urgent tone.

"Sodou, if it is related to studies then talk to Yukimura, he is the one in-charge."

"It's not just come quickly." then he cut the call.

I sighed. If I Kei here she will be angry for a long time. Last time I made a mistake, she didn't talk to me for a week and pouted angrily everytime I tried.

"Kei, I was thinking that you haven't bought anything for yourself for a long time."

"That's true, but I am trying to save some points."

"Then how would you feel, if I offer you the free pass. Buy anything you want and send me the bill."

"Why are you doing this?" she looked at me suspiciously.

"As a good frien-"

"No, don't bullshit me."

"I need to go, it's related to the class."

She thought for sometime and an evil grin formed on her face.

"I will let you go, if you go to that romantic movie I was telling you about and also the offer you gave."

"Whatever, just message me the amount and I will send you the points."

Whatever problems Sodou has better be good or I will torment him slowly. Because of him, now I have to sit and watch a corny movie for three hours.

As I reached my dorm room, I saw Sodou and Kushida standing in front of my door.

"What took you so long? I am waiting here for the last 20 minutes." he shouted at me.

"Sodou, you want my help. It's not the other way around. So I would suggest you to speak to me politely."

"Whatever, just open the door. I can't talk in the open."

I took out my key card and swiped it on the lock.

"Kushida, what are you doing here anyway?" I asked her.

"Sodou-kun called me here for the same reason as you."

Sodou sat down on the sofa beside Kushida and I sat down in the extra chair.

"Whoa, Ayanokouji how do you have so many things? Your room looks like a rich guys home." Sodou asked.

"All of it is second hand, now on the important matter. Speak."

"Save me, Ayanokouji!" Sudou said.

"From what? Will you ever reveal that?"

"Did you read the announcement in the official class group? Our homeroom teacher called me today. Well, it's...Uh... The truth is...I may be suspended. For a long time, actually."

I signed. "What kind of shenanigans you pulled off this time? You never give the class a break, do you? Did you insult Chabashira-sensei, by any chance?"

His reckless behavior with an uncontrollable tongue made it possible for such things to happen.

"That's not it."

"Then what? Did you grab her by the collar and threaten to kill her or something?" I too had done a similar thing but not to that extent. But she wanted to blackmail me so I wasn't at fault.

"That's not it, either."

Another denial. I hadn't expected that.

"It's probably worse than you're thinking..."

My first two guesses had been pretty serious, so if it was something worse, then...

"Oh, I got it, Ayanokouji-kun. He viciously beat Chabashira-sensei and then he spit on her!" Kushida cried.

"That's horrible. I mean, your wild ideas are way too awful, Kushida!"

"Ha ha, I'm only joking! Sudou-kun wouldn't go that far." she laughed and shared a look with me.

"What happened?" I asked for the final time.

"To tell you the truth, I beat up some kids from Class C yesterday. Then, I got suspended. The suspension is probably my punishment."

Kushida was shocked by Sudou's words. She shot me a look. I wasn't surprised that Sodou got into trouble again.

"You beat them up? So, why did you do that? Don't tell me for fun. " I asked.

"Just so you know, it wasn't my fault, okay? The jerks in Class C started it and tried to pick a fight with me. I just responded to the situation and turned the tables on them. Then they said that I started the fight. They're a bunch of liars."

"Just wait a minute, Sudou-kun. Can you please start over, and go a bit more slowly?" Kushida encouraged him to calm down and tried to get him to tell us the story.

"Sorry, I guess I just kind of skipped to the end and left a lot out." Sudou took a deep breath and started over.

"I was talking with the club advisor about being a regular for the summer tournament."

"A regular player? That's amazing, Sudou-kun! Congratulations!" Kushida said.

"Well, nothing's set in stone yet. It's just a possibility for now."

"Still, that's amazing. We've only just started school."

"Yeah, I suppose. Actually, I was the only first-year student nominated to be a regular player. Still, it's not like it's definite. Anyway, when I was on my way back to the dorm, Komiya and

Kondou, who're in the basketball club with me, called me over to the special building. They said they wanted to talk to me about something. I could've just ignored them, but I mean, I occasionally talk to those two guys during basketball. I thought it'd be better to just hear them out. So of course, I went to meet with them, right? Then, there was this Ishizaki guy there, waiting for me. He's Komiya and Kondou's friend. They said that they couldn't stand that someone like me from Class D had been chosen as a regular. They threatened me, and said to quit basketball or there'd be a lot of pain in my future. I refused to quit, I beat them up, and now I'm here."

It was a rather hurried explanation, but I got the gist. Apparently Sudou was satisfied with his story.

"So then they painted you as the bad guy, Sudou-kun." Kushida said.

"So, this was the trap that Ryūen set."

"What do you mean trap, Ayanokoji? You knew about this? And who is this Ryūen?" Sodou asked.

"Ryūen is the leader of Class C. I knew that Ryūen would try to take down our class by framing someone for something. That's why when those Class C girls approached Ike and Yamauchi, I thought that would be the trap but I was wrong."

Ryūen is clearly smarter than he looks.

"So, that means they wanted to get beat up. Who does that?" Sodou asked.

"When you have a guy like Ryūen as your leader, you would have to."

"But, how can the teacher just believe them?" he said.

"We should tell Chabashira-sensei tomorrow. We should tell her it wasn't Sudou-kun's fault," Kushida said.

"It isn't that simple, we don't have any solid proof. Moreover, Sodou actually beat them. Sodou, did you confessed that you beat them?"

"Yes, I told them the entire story. How they were the one who called me and then got beat up."

"Sodou, in these type of situation. You should remain silent. If you hadn't claimed that you beat them, they wouldn't have any evidence as well." I said.

"I-I didn't think of that. Sorry." his head hung low.

"Anyways, what did the school say when they heard what happened?"

"They said they would give me until next Wednesday to come up with proof. If I can't do that, they'll say I'm at fault and I'll be suspended until summer. On top of that, the whole class will lose points, too."

Apparently the school had decided to wait for evidence. However, Sudou appeared more worried about his basketball dreams than his suspension, or our class's loss of points. I guess he couldn't bear the thought of his youth being squandered.

"What should I do?"

"If we are lucky, then we will find some evidence. But we can only hope. The class just earned some points and now it will be back to where it begin. I don't think you'll would be very welcome after this, Sodou."

Our current troubles wouldn't be resolved merely by discovering who'd started it. Perhaps those three students might face a one-week suspension themselves, as punishment. Those three guys had claimed they were beaten up. Without ironclad proof that Sudou wasn't at fault, he would definitely be punished. That meant only one thing.

"Even if the other party is at fault, it's still highly likely that Sudou will take some of the blame."

"Huh? Why? It was legitimate self-defense, wasn't it? Huh?!" Sudou, clearly unable to understand, smacked the table.

Kushida's shoulders stiffened in response.

"I'm sorry, I just got a little mad." After seeing Kushida's frightened expression, Sudou sheepishly apologized.

"But...why would Sudou-kun still take some of the blame?"

"Sudou hit them, but they didn't hit Sudou. In such a case, claiming it as legitimate self-defense is nigh-impossible. Had they come at you with a knife or a metal bat, which they didn't because they wanted this to happen. Self-defense means that you have the right to defend yourself against sudden, dangerous attacks made against your person. So, I don't think we can really claim that this was self-defense. We are trapped from all sides, just as Ryūen wants it."

How much consideration would be given in this situation?

"I-I don't understand, though. I was up against three people. Three! That seems plenty dangerous."

They'd likely take the number of people into account, but this was a delicate case. If the school were willing to place more weight on the number of people who'd attacked, Sudou could be declared innocent. However, it was dangerous to be optimistic.

"I think the school might have offered an extension because they found it difficult to make a judgment at this time."

As for the current proof, the key was in the injuries Sudou had given those three other students.

"I guess that their plan is to severely punish our class and Sudou, huh?" Kushida said.

"Whoever reported it first has the advantage. The victim's testimony can work as solid evidence."

"I still don't get it. I'm the victim here! Being suspended isn't some kind of joke! If I'm punished for this, forget being a regular player. I won't even be able to play in the tournament!"

I guess that's another reason for Sodou being there target, amongst

the obvious ones.

Sudou picked up a ballpoint pen from the table and, with a loud crack, snapped it in two. I understood that his blood was boiling, but that was my pen...

"There might be something, though. This might just be a misunderstanding on my part, but when I was fighting those guys I felt something...odd. Like someone was nearby, watching me." He didn't sound entirely confident.

"So there might be an eyewitness?" I asked.

"Yeah, I think so. I don't have proof anyone was there, though."

"An eyewitness. Hmm. If someone had seen everything, then that'd be great news for us. However, depending on how things went, it might drive you further into a corner. For example, if the witness only saw the aftermath of your fight, that might spell your end." I explained.

"So, the idea is to find the eyewitness you talked about, Sudou-kun. If someone happened to see the fight, then we should be able to get to the heart of the matter."

"So, how do you intend to look for this eyewitness?"

"Asking people one by one? Or we could simply address each class as a whole," Kushida said.

"It would be great if someone just stepped forward, but..."

Since we'd been talking for quite some time, I started rummaging through the cupboard. I took out the instant coffee and tea packets that I'd bought at the school convenience store. Sudou wasn't really a fan of coffee, though. After preparing a kettle of hot water, I put everything on the table.

"This might sound kind of shameless, but...can you guys not tell anyone about this?" Sudou asked sheepishly. He took a cup and started blowing on it to cool it off.

"H-huh? You don't want us to tell anyone?" Kushida asked.

"If word gets out, it'll definitely get around to the basketball team. I don't want that to happen. You understand, right?"

"Sudou, even then, I-"

"Please understand, Ayanokouji. If I can't play basketball, I have nothing," Sudou pleaded, placing his hands on my shoulders.

Even if word didn't get out, this wasn't going to stay contained. If people found out that Sudou had used violence, they most likely wouldn't accept him on the team.

"But won't the students in Class C talk about how Sudou-kun was violent? I mean, that would work in their favor, I'd think."

That's exactly what I was thinking. It wouldn't be strange for them to talk about it amongst themselves, since that helped them and would hurt us. Sudou buried his head in his hands once again, as if to say "Seriously?!"

"What if word already got out?"

"No, at this stage it's probably only being discussed by the school and the people involved."

"Why do you think that?" Sudou asked.

"If those guys in Class C had intended to spread rumors, we probably would've heard about it already."

Representatives from the school had received a report and called Sudou in after class. There hadn't been any word about the incident till now. At the very least, word probably hadn't spread much.

"So you think we're safe for now?"

How long would that last, though? Even if the school issued a gag order, word would eventually manage to get out. Before long, it'd spread. Right now, the only thing I could say with certainty was-

"Sudou-kun, I think it would be better if you kept your distance," Kushida said.

She seemed to understand everything.

"Yeah. It wouldn't be good if the accused tried anything," I replied, agreeing with Kushida.

"But, if I dump this on you guys-"

"I don't think it's being dumped on us. We want you to rely on us, Sudou-kun. I don't know how much we can do, but we'll try our best. Okay?" Kushida said.

"All right. I know this is a bother for you guys, but I'll leave it to you." He seemed to understand that he'd only complicate things by getting involved.

"Well, I'll head back to my room. Sorry for disturbing your afternoon, Ayanokoji." he said and left.

As the door closed. Kushida let go of her act.

"Ugh, that idiotic organism with a single brain cell. How many times should we have to save him?"

"I am thankful that you interchanged my study group with Hirata's. Those boys are tolerable. Sodou and his idiotic company would have driven me nuts."

Gotta say Kushida's insults are always creative.

"I don't think it's his fault. It was Ryūen who did play smart. This guy is impressing me. Finding and hitting the weak spots of our class, impressive." I said while slowly drinking my coffee.

"You don't sound worried. Shouldn't we serious about this, our class would lose the hard earned points." she said.

"When did you start caring about the class points?"

"Since, I have been working for you. Now answer the damn

question." Kushida snapped.

"There is no need to worry, just be silent for a moment."

"What, what are you doing?"

"I am running simulations in my head. How the class would react, what are our chances, what will be the aftermath. Every possibility. That's how I predict everything and make my plans accordingly." I explained.

"Whoa, it's like watching a super computer calculating results." Kushida said with fascination.

"Now leave me alone."

"Hey, you could have asked me nicely."

"....."

"Okay, no need to give me that blank stare."

As she left, I opened my phone and checked my messages. I found what I required.

Day 8 of continuous updates

Nothing much to say, I am tired af.

That's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-2 Ch-3 The Case

Reads: 1348 | Votes: 69 | Comments: 20

The bad news just kept coming.

During homeroom the following morning, as Chabashira-sensei was about to leave, she assaulted us with one of her infamously brief and off-hand announcements.

"I have an announcement for you all. There was a bit of trouble the other day, an incident between the student sitting there, Sudou, and some students from Class C. In short, there was a fight."

The classroom erupted. Depending on the degree of responsibility that Class C saddled him with, Sudou could face suspension, and we might see a reduction in our class points. Chabashira-sensei laid the whole situation bare for the class.

Her face was so devoid of emotion or interest when she spoke that there was a certain serene beauty to it. She inserted no personal bias whatsoever when she addressed the class, and explained the situation from a position of neutrality.

"Umm. So why hasn't this issue been resolved already?" Hirata asked a rather reasonable question.

"The complaint came from Class C. They claim that the fight was one sided. However, when we spoke to the accused, Sudou said that their claims were false. He insists that the students Class C called him over and started the fight."

"It wasn't my fault! It was self-defense! Self-defense, I tell you!" shouted Sudou as he shouldered his classmate's icy glares.

"But there's no evidence of that. Am I wrong?"

"What evidence? I don't have any."

"So in other words, we don't yet know the truth. Therefore, we have put our decision on hold for now. Our response, and the punishment, will come when we find out who was at fault."

"All I know is that I'm innocent. If anything, I ought to receive a settlement for my trouble."

"So speaks the accused, but I wouldn't say that you have a high level of credibility right now. If there is an eyewitness, as Sudou seems to believe, then the situation may change. If anyone here witnessed the fight, please raise your hand."

Chabashira-sensei continued talking in a robotic, flat voice. No students raised their hands in response to her question.

"Too bad, Sudou. It appears there are no witnesses in this class."

"Looks that way," he grumbled. When Chabashira-sensei cast a doubtful look at Sudou, he glanced downward.

"In order to check for witnesses, every teacher will inform their classes of the details of this incident."

"Huh?! You're telling everyone?!"

The school probably had no say in the matter. Because Sudou had insisted it was a false charge and brought up a potential witness, the school had to be sure. For Sudou, who had hoped to hide the situation, none of this was good.

"Damn it!" Sudou's plan had already fallen apart.

"Anyway, that is all. We'll make our final judgment this Wednesday, taking into account any eyewitnesses and evidence. With that, let's end homeroom for the day." Chabashira-sensei left, and Sudou followed right after her.

He probably realized that if he stayed in the classroom, he'd lose his temper with someone.

The class exploded with curses, some pretty awful remarks about Sodou were said. Even by Ike and Yamauchi. Who had the guts to

call Sodou the worst. I would have liked to see Sodou's reaction to that.

I stood up and took my place at the podium and remained silent.

Seeing me just standing there, the class stopped talking. They looked at me with anticipation.

"Don't worry, Ayanokouji-kun will save us." claimed a confident Mori.

"I don't about that one, Mori. Yesterday, Sodou came to my room and told me everything in detail. It's a pretty air tight case. There is no way of saving Sodou."

"Ayanokouji-kun, there must be some way of saving him." Hirata said.

"Did you even listen to what I just said. Which brings me to the point. You are the incharge for the discipline of the class, aren't you Hirata?"

"Yes, I am but Sodou and the others refuse to listen to me."

"What kind of excuse is that? They just won't obey you. Then make them obey. You are in charge of this, if you can't fulfill one job then relinquish your position."

Hirata had shame on his face. He looked down.

"Ayanokouji-kun, is it really fair that even though it's Sodou-kun's mistake you are scolding Hirata-kun." Wang Mei asked.

"Yes, because if tomorrow somebody failed without me knowing anything about it, then I would blame Yukimura and Horikita. I would like to know what is happening in the class. That's why I assigned special roles. If you want to be useless, be useless somewhere else not in the class."

Everybody were shaken by my anger.

"Anyways, before you start blaming Sodou and give up on him. Let

me tell you, it was a trap set by Class C especially to damage our class points."

"Wait, you are saying that all of this was intentional? So that we would lose points." said Maezono.

"Yes, so if we just give up and let Sodou face punishment. We will be admitting defeat to Class C. Do we admit defeat and let them roll over us? Besides Sodou was on the verge of becoming a regular in the team. As you know the better position, you are in your club. More beneficial it is for your class and personal gain. It would be a waste to let this opportunity go. "

"No, we will fight Ayanokouji-kun. Just tell us what to do." said Kushida.

"First of all, we need to find a witness. Hirata and Karuizawa form two groups and scour the entire school. I want every student to be questioned. But, do that without letting it affect the study groups. The finals are in three weeks, so no halfheartedness on that part." Both of the said individual nodded.

"Chiaki, Kikyou and I will investigate the matter in detail. Rest of you, continue to study hard." I finished and left.

After the class ended for the day, Kikyou and Chiaki met me outside the school building.

"So, where are we going Kiyotaka-kun? You just told us to wait here." asked Kushida. Because of Chiaki's presence she was still keeping up her act.

"Kushida, you can drop the act. I already know about you." Chiaki said.

"What is Matsushita-san talking about, Kiyotaka-kun?" she gave me a glare.

"Who do you think took the recording of your kind words on the rooftop, Kushida? I did."

"B-but, Ayanokoji you said you would never tell anybody."

"I never told her, she was the one who found out. Be grateful that she is not telling anybody."

"Don't worry Kushida, I won't go blabbering about your secret. It's safe with me." Chiaki said.

"Enough talking, we are visiting the student council for the file containing information about Sodou's case." I said.

The student council was situated at the top floor of the club activities building. It was 15 floors tall and housed every kind of clubs. From archery to robotics lab. Every indoor activity equipments could be found here.

We took the elevator to the top floor. As the elevator gates opened, we entered into a lobby.

It had a reception desk, sofas were placed with a table. All in all, it looked like a front office of a workplace.

The whole floor was dedicated to the students council. There was a special offices for the vice-president and the president each.

A girl with purple hair that was tied in two buns and peach brown eyes was sitting at the reception desk. According to OAA, her name was Tachibana Akane. I approached her.

"How may I help you? Did you press the wrong button of the elevator?" she asked.

"No we are in the right floor. We want to meet the president. It's about Sodou Ken's case."

"Did you have a prior appointment? If not then you wouldn't be allowed."

"No, I didn't make any prior appointment and judging by the looks of this place, I didn't need to. It's empty, he isn't meeting anyone. Just let us be and don't annoy me."

"What a rude Kōhai, you are. If I was the president, I would have never let you get away with it." she glared at me.

"I don't care. I will be going now." I said that and moved towards the president's office and just opened the door.

"Hey, did I give you my permission?" Angry Senpai shouted.

"Ayanokouji Kiyotaka, I expected you to meet me. Take a seat." said Manabu.

I ignored the rantings of a angry senpai and sat down. Kikyou and Chiaki took their seats beside me.

As I looked around the room, it was heavily furnished with luxurious furniture. The seat in which Manabu was sitting looked like a throne. The wall behind the throne was made of glass that provided a gorgeous view from this height. This room was designed to make you feel like a ruler.

"I have a few questions, I would like to ask them." I said focusing back on the topic at hand.

"Feel free to ask anything." he replied without hesitation.

"So, how did they submit the complaint. Verbally or written?"

"It was a written complaint. But, we took their statement of the incident for the record."

"Good, can I get a copy of that?"

"Here, I prepared this in advance." Manabu gave me a file. It contained the official letter of complaint. There statement and the photographs of their injuries as an evidence.

"Ayanokouji, the odds are stacked against you here. If you win this case, I will accept you into the students council." he said.

"President, but shouldn't he submit an application beforehand. It's the standard procedure." said Angry Senpai.

"Tachibana, do you remember about the student who was the first in the history of the school to get perfect score in the entrance examinations. He is the one."

At this not only the Angry Senpai, but even Kushida was surprised. Even she didn't know about this.

"Shouldn't you ask me first, if I want to join the students council or not."

"I know that you want to, not only it provides a lot of benefits to your class. But it would affect your social standing positively. If you are still not satisfied. Then you have already seen the authority that I hold. The amount of information that I have access to is limitless." he sounded like a salesman with a sales pitch.

"So, is the students council that powerful or the president?"

"It depends on the person sitting at the top."

"So, I have to reach the top."

"You are saying that you are incapable of becoming the president in the future."

"I will accept your deal. I have only one condition."

I told him my condition, even though it would be biased towards me and help me, he agreed.

After that we took our leave and left the office.

"Kiyotaka, the favor you asked to the president. Couldn't it backfire on us. It was a very risky move." Kushida said as we were walking towards the dorms.

"I have no doubts about my decision. Now, I will be going to my spot for some time alone. So you both can leave." I said.

I made my way to my spot. I could feel the presence following me. It has been following me around for quite a few days.

I took my seat at the bench. When a petite girl with lilac coloured hair walking with a cane appeared. Arisu Sakayanagi, memorizing names and faces of every student in this school comes handy.

"So, I assume that the people following me for the last few days where sent by you."

"Yes. As expected from someone like you, Ayanokouji-kun. That will be all Masumi-san. You can leave us." she said to the girl hiding.

I felt her going away. I looked at Sakayanagi, she was just standing there and looking at me with an unreadable expression.

So, I did the same too. Maybe it was an hour but we just stared at each other. The sky started to turn dark and the sun had set.

"You have drawn quite a lot of attention since you enrolled in this school, Ayanokouji-kun." That was all she said.

"What do you want? I would like to wrap this up quickly. I have many times to do."

"When I heard that Class D had beaten Class A in an exam. I was quite surprised. After digging for some information, I found out that they had an outstanding leader who have scored perfect scores in all the exams. I got suspicious but I didn't pay much mind , after the release of OAA. When I saw your name and face, I remembered something. I came to meet you here because I wanted to share the shock I felt with you. It's almost like the buildup toward a romantic confession, don't you think?"

"Nah, I think you are being dramatic."

Clack. Clack.

Sakayanagi, still gripping her cane, moved right next to me.

"It's been quite a long time, Ayanokouji-kun. Eight years and 181 days, actually."

"You're joking, right? I don't even know who you are."

"Heh. No, I suppose not. It's just me who knows you, after all."

Clack. Clack.

Her cane's tapping gradually grew quieter. She sat down besides me.

What in the world was this about? I decided I was done here, and got up to walk away from Sakayanagi.

"White Room," Sakayanagi said.

I stopped dead in my tracks at those two simple words and sat down again. They cracked my composure.

"It's unpleasant, isn't it? When only your opponent knows your secrets."

"You..."

"This is a reunion. I just wanted to come give you a proper greeting."

Reunion? Though I kept seated besides Sakayanagi, I turned my head to look at her. Even though I had an inkling that she might know about white room and me because of her father. But when did we meet? It couldn't be possible, did that man really let an outsider see the white room.

If he did then Chairman Sakayanagi must be an important person to gain such trust from that man.

"Oh, it's quite all right that you don't know me. But I know you. We have a strange sort of bond, you could say. To reunite with you in a place like this... To be honest, I never thought I'd see you again. But now, all the mysteries have been cleared away" she said.

"Please, relax," she added. "I've no intention of telling anyone about you at present."

"Wouldn't things be easier if you did?"

"I don't want anything to get in my way. I'm the perfect person to bury the false genius." Clack. Her thin cane clattered against the floor.

"I've found little pleasure in this boring school life." she continued.

"Can I ask you something else?" I asked.

"Please, go ahead. I'm honored to have you ask me a question. If you'd like to know, I'm even happy to tell you how I know about you."

"No, I'm not interested in that. There's just one thing I want to know."

My eyes met Sakayanagi's. With all seriousness I asked her.

"What will you do? If I just picked up your cane and ran away." I said with a straight face.

"Hee hee!" Sakayanagi chuckled softly to herself, and smiled onc emore.

"Sorry for laughing. I don't intend to insult you. I know quite well how incredible you are. I've been looking forward to this. I'll be able to realize my dearest wish by destroying the greatest masterpiece that your father ever made. You might take think this is a joke, Ayanokouji-kun. But I will defeat you and prove for once and for all that nurture can't hope to match the superior DNA."

I didn't pay attention to her little monologue. I started playing with her cane that had fallen on the ground. Swinging it around like a sword.

"Do-don't, do that. Give me my cane back." she said visibly annoyed.

"Sakayanagi, I really wish to take you seriously but honestly I can't. It's like seeing a kindergartner threatening me to take revenge for stealing their favourite chocolate." I said with a smile while patting her head.

"Your overconfidence in your abilities is really amusing, Ayanokouji-kun. Alas, you will only realise that you can be defeated once I am through with you." she said with a glare.

"Well, I am done here. It will be better for your weak heart if you don't seduce me like that. By the way, this is my number. Contact me if you need any help with defeating your own classmate first. Yes, I know all about Class A faction wars." I said and just left.

I can only hope that she puts up a good fight. Or else the three years in this school will be boring.

Finally, Sakayanagi has entered the chat.

I made the scene a little humorous, how do you like it? Also, the number of days is a rough estimate. Since in the LN she said 8 years 243 days around September and right now it is July so I just deduct 62 days.

And, yes. Ayanokouji will be joining the students council. It makes sense in this story. He would like to have any advantage here.

Also, that students council building idea was made up by me. Was it realistic, I don't know. It's a school of the elite. They might give an entire floor to the students council.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-2 Ch-4 The Creep

Reads: 1417 | Votes: 57 | Comments: 20

It was Tuesday morning, I got off the elevator and saw an unusual duo standing.

"Kikyou and Suzune, I didn't know that you two were close friends. Walking to school together. You are finally making friends Suzune, I feel like a proud father." I wiped an imaginary tear.

"Ayanokouji-kun, don't make me angry this early in the morning. I am here to discuss about an important topic with you while Kushida-san was waiting for you." she gave me her usual glare.

"Let's talk while walking. I don't want to get late. So what do you want to talk about?"

"Have you made contact with any witnesses for the case?" she asked.

"It's surprising to see you care about that? What happened are you okay?" I said while checking her temperature. I was really in the mood to annoy Suzune today.

"Since that incident, I am trying to improve. If I can help my class for the better then I will not hesitate." she said with determination.

"That's good. But no we haven't made contact with any witnesses."

"Then I can help you. Yesterday when you announced for the search of witnesses. Sakura-san looked down. A lot of students were staring at you. But Sakura was the only one who didn't appear interested. She wouldn't have acted that way without some connection to the incident."

I was genuinely impressed by Horikita's observational prowess. She'd noticed a classmate's very minor gesture.

"Thank you, Horikita-san. But we already knew that. Yesterday, Kiyotaka-kun told me and Matsushita-san about it. He has already instructed me to talk to her and persuade her to testify." Kushida said. Although it sounded like she was bragging. Perhaps to insult Suzune that she was late to the party.

"But you said that you haven't found any witnesses?" Suzune asked me.

"You asked if we made contact with the witness. We haven't, we just know who it is." I explained.

"I still don't understand. If you already know who the witness is then why did you tell the class to form groups and search for witnesses." she asked.

"If a large number of students from our class asked about a witness, even though we already have one. Then what would a normal outsider think?"

"That, we still haven't gotten a witness. Oh! You mean you want to surprise Class C with a witness. They wouldn't be prepared if they didn't know about it."

"Yes, that's the gist of it."

"I see, so my help was not required. Sorry for wasting your time, Ayanokouji-kun." she said and left. I knew this hurt her pride immensely.

"You know, you could have just kept quite about it and let her think that she actually helped." I said.

"Where's the fun in that. I would never leave a chance to insult that bitch. You wouldn't mind, would you?" she looked at me with those cute eyes.

"You do know that your seducing abilities don't work on me." I gave her a blank stare.

"You are the only one, any other guy would have been on the floor by my cuteness."

"I think, I like your other side more. When you show your real face with those eyes full of hate. You look more beautiful that way." I said.

It was a rare moment but I saw Kushida blushing.

"Stop talking about it, someone might here us." she said.

We entered the classroom and the first face I saw was Hirata.

"Ayanokouji-kun, I am really sorry. We asked anybody we could but we didn't find any witnesses. It's my fault for this. I take all the responsibility." He apologized with a bow.

"Calm down Hirata, there's no need to panic. I have found a way to save Sodou. You all can relax." hearing this most of the class took a breath of relief.

Class was over. Kikyou stood up right as homeroom ended and walked over towards Sakura, who was quietly preparing to leave. Kikyou pretended to be nervous.



"Sakura-san?"

"Wh-what?"

The bespectacled girl with the hunched back peered up with a timid expression. Apparently she hadn't expected someone to talk to her,

and was flustered.

"I wanted to ask you something, Sakura-san. Do you have a moment? It's about Sudou's case."

"S-sorry. I...I have plans, so..."

Sakura was obviously uncomfortable. She averted her eyes. She wasn't good at talking with others. Or rather, she gave off the impression that she didn't like talking to them.

"Can you please make some time? This is important, so I'd like to talk to you. When Sudou-kun was involved in the incident, were you perhaps somewhere nearby?"

"I-I don't know. I already told Horikita-san. I really don't know anything..."

Her words were weak, yet she vehemently denied it. Kikyou could clearly see how unpleasant Sakura found this, so she probably didn't want to press her much more. Although Kikyou appeared slightly perplexed at first, her concerned expression quickly melted into a pleasant smile. Even so, she couldn't withdraw just like that, because Sakura might have tremendous influence over Sudou's fate.

"So...is it okay? If I go back..."

Sakura whispered. Something seemed strange, however. She wasn't simply bad at talking with people. It looked as though she was hiding something. You could see that from her behavior. Sakura concealed her dominant hand while also avoiding eye contact. Even if she weren't comfortable meeting someone's eyes, people generally looked in the direction of those to whom they were speaking. Sakura didn't look at Kikyou's face at all. If Ike or Yamauchi were talking to her, I could have understood that reaction.

Though it was mostly out of formal obligation, Sakura had exchanged numbers with Kikyou.

"Can't you please spare just a few minutes now?" Kikyou asked.

"Wh-why, though? I-I don't know anything..."

If Kikyou failed, we'd gain nothing from their conversation. Of course, the longer this awkwardness dragged on, the more attention they'd attract. This seemed like a complete miscalculation on Kikyou's part. Since they were already acquainted and had exchanged contact information, Kikyou probably had expected this conversation to go more smoothly, and had gone into this situation thinking she wasn't going to be rejected. That explained why this was currently falling apart.

"I'm really bad at being social. I'm sorry..." Sakura muttered.

She spoke in an unnatural, strained way, and didn't seem to want Kikyou to get any closer. When discussing Sakura earlier, Kikyou had described her as a shy but ordinary girl. Judging from her current behavior, though, she clearly wasn't normal. Kikyou must have felt the same, because she couldn't hide her confusion.

If Kikyou couldn't do it, then I didn't think that anyone else in our class would be able to. Kikyou was good at creating an informal atmosphere, one in which socially awkward people could converse naturally.

However, everyone has what they consider their own personal space. An off-limits area, in other words. Cultural anthropologist Edward Hall further divided the idea of personal space into four parts. One such zone is the so-called "intimatespace." In this particular space, you'd be near enough to hug someone. If an outsider tries to step into this space, people naturally exhibit strong signs of rejection. However, if that person is a lover or a best friend, then he or she won't find it uncomfortable. Even if someone were only a casual acquaintance, Kikyou would pretend letting that person into her "intimate space." However, Sakura had clearly rejected Kikyou.

No...rather, it looked like she was running away. When Sakura was first asked, she'd said that she "had plans." If she really did have plans, she'd have repeated that when asked again. Sakura collected her bag and stood, seemingly putting distance between herself and Kikyou.

"G-goodbye." Sakura had apparently decided to run because she

couldn't find a skillful way to end the conversation.

She snatched a digital camera off her desk, and started to walk away.

Just then, she ran into Hondou's shoulder. Focused on texting a friend, he wasn't paying attention to where he was going.

"Ah!" Sakura's digital camera tumbled to the floor with a loud clack.

Hondou simply kept walking, attention still focused on his phone. He apologized as he left.

"My bad," he called.

Sakura, flustered, rushed to pick up her camera.

"No way. There's nothing on the screen..." Sakura put her hand over her mouth in total shock. The camera seemed to have broken on impact. She pushed the power button over and over, tried taking out the batteries and putting them back in, but the power indicator never came on.

"I-I'm sorry. It's because I came up and talked to you so suddenly, that..." Kikyou began.

"No, that's not it. I was just careless, that's all... Anyway, goodbye." Kikyou, unable to stop the despondent Sakura, could only watch her leave with regret.

I sighed. "Sorry Sodou but that was the last option. Without her my plan won't work. I can't help you. Tomorrow is the hearing and we don't have anything." I said to Sodou who was standing beside me. He was the only one who knew about this besides Kikyou.

"At most you will be suspended and the class would suffer some damage. We would just work harder to recover it."

"Why do I have to suffer like this? You bunch of useless jerks!" he said to everybody in the classroom. People didn't even know why he said that.

"Don't you think it would've been better if you'd been expelled? Your existence is far from beautiful. No, in fact, I could say your life is an ugly one, Red Hair-kun."

The voice came from a boy checking his reflection in a hand mirror to fix his hair. It was none other than Kouenji Rokusuke.

"What the hell? Say that one more time, I dare you!"

"It would be inefficient for me to tell you, no matter how many times I did. If I know that you're dim-witted, then it doesn't matter how many times I try to lecture you, does it?"

Kouenji didn't even look at Sudou as he spoke. It was as if this were a soliloquy. Suddenly, there was a huge crashing sound. A desk flew through the air and splintered on the ground after being kicked. Everyone froze. Sudou, silent and intense, walked over to Kouenji.

"All right, that's enough. Calm down, you two," Hirata said. Finally he is doing what he is supposed to. This was his job. Stopping fights, preventing desks from flying around.

"Sudou-kun. You certainly are part of the problem here. But Kouenji kun, you're in the wrong, too."

"Puh. I don't think I've experienced being wrong since I was born. You must be mistaken."

"Bring it on. I'll smash your face in and take you down a peg," Sudou snapped.

"Stop it."

Hirata grabbed Sudou's arm, sternly attempting to stop him, but Sudou showed no signs of being swayed. He looked like he wanted to vent all of his frustrations by hitting Kouenji.

"Stop it already. I don't want to see my friends fight..."

"I'm going to stop this. Sudou-kun, you should act more mature. If you cause another huge disturbance, the school's evaluation of you will only worsen. Right?"

"Tch."

Sudou glared at Kouenji and left the classroom, slamming the door on his way out. Afterward, a loud voice could be heard in the hall.

"Kouenji-kun. I don't intend to compel you to help. But you were wrong to blame him."

"Unfortunately, I've never experienced being wrong. Not once in my entire life. Oh, looks like it's about time for my date. Well, if you'll excuse me."

This commotion itself may have lost us a couple of points. People's opinion on Sodou didn't get any better.

I messaged Kikyou what to do next and left the class with Chiaki.

It was hot and humid after class. I made my way over the special building, where the incident had taken place. It wasn't like a murder case where the area needed to be taped off to prevent people from contaminating the crime scene. It didn't really look any different than usual. I didn't see any indication that this building's facilities were used frequently, like the special classrooms, the home economics room, the AV room, etc.

This would have been an ideal place to call Sudou out.

"It's so hot..."

This heat was abnormal. This was probably how summer at school should feel, but I had at least imagined that inside the building would be somewhat comfortable, the cool air balancing out the heat. I guess I'd gotten too used to air-conditioned buildings. I felt even hotter because of that gap in expectation. The air conditioning was probably on during class time in the special building, but it certainly wasn't right now.

"Sorry for bringing you here." I said to Chiaki. While I was sweating heavily, she looked fine.

"So, why are we here, again?" she asked.

"I was just thinking about something, hmm. Might as well do it." Chiaki didn't understand a word I said.

"Sometimes you speak in codes. What are you thinking?"

"Did you noticed that there are no cameras here? That's the reason they called Sodou here. Aside from this scorching heat which would totally affect our rational thinking."

"Yes, but we already knew that. So?"

"But what if there was? We could lure them out here, show them the cameras. Make them confess the truth and record it." I said.

"Is this heat affecting your brains? Why would we need to do that?"

"Trust me, I have a plan." I said.

The heat was making me dizzy. I moved towards the window, hoping for some cool air. I opened the window...and then immediately slammed it shut.

"That was dangerous."

Opening the window had only let more hot air into the room. Leaving it ajar would've resulted in tragedy, I was sure of it. When I thought about howit would keep getting hotter all the way through August, I became depressed.

However, coming here today had given me some ideas, so enduring this torture was worth it.

"You know what, I have reached my limits. Let's go back." I said to Chiaki.

"Ah."

"Oops!"

Turning the hallway corner, I bumped into another student.

"Sorry, are you okay?" I asked.

The impact of our collision wasn't very hard. At the very least, she didn't fell over.

"Yeah. I'm sorry. I was careless," she said.

"Oh no, I'm sorry. Wait...Sakura?" Mid apology, I realized just whom I'd run into.

"Ah, um?"

She instantly recognized me as the leader of her class. Which frightened her even more.

"Ah, oh. Well, you see... My hobby is taking pictures, so..."

She showed me her phone's screen. I hadn't really planned on asking for details. Besides, it wasn't particularly unnatural to use your phone. Sakura had probably thought we were returning to the dorms, and now she was undoubtedly wondering why we were here.

"You said it's your hobby? What kind of pictures?" I asked.

"Things like the hallway...and the view outside the window. Stuff like that, I guess."

"G-goodbye." she said.

"Sakura." I called as she tried to hasten away. "You don't have to forceyourself."

Sakura stopped, but didn't turn around.

"You shouldn't feel obligated to appear as the witness, Sakura. It'd be pointless to force you to testify. But if someone scary is trying to intimidate you or something, please talk to me. I have no idea how much I can help, but I'll try."

"I didn't see anything. You've got the wrong person..."

"Then that's fine. However, if someone else tries to hound you about it, please tell me."

Sakura went meekly down the stairs.

"Hey, you two. What are you doing?"

We turned in response to the unexpected voice. Ichinose stood behind us. Does this place attract girls with pinkish hair. First Sakura, then Ichinose.

"Sorry to interrupt you like that. Do you have a moment? Oh, if you happen to be in the middle of doing something ecchi though, I'd like you to break it up right away." she said.

I guess my condition due to heat give her some wrong ideas. By now I was covered with sweat, I looked like I had ran for miles. My hair which was sticking out in a weird way didn't help either.

"It's nothing like that." said Chiaki in a high pitched voice.

"Ha ha, I see. This place is a little too hot to be doing that."

"So, what are you doing here Ichinose?" I asked.

"I thought that surely there'd be something here related to the brawl. I wasn't here yesterday when Class B heard about the witness. Later, I heard that Class D was looking for evidence of Sudou's innocence."

"But why did you take so much trouble for us, Class B is not involved or anything. I mean I don't mind it, we do need all the help we can get."

"During the mid terms, you helped our class by revealing the trap that school had set. So it would make sense if I help you in return."

"It wasn't much. But I am grateful for your help."

"Even if I didn't, I am sure Mako-chan would want to help you. She is gotten quite close with you."

"She is just lying, she rarely hangs out with us." I replied.

""Can you tell me about this incident in detail. All my teacher and

friends say is that there was some kind of fight."

I hesitated briefly, but since there wasn't much information to be gained anyway, it may not have been worth keeping quiet. So I explained the situation. I told her that three people from Class C had called Sudou over, and there was a fistfight. However, Sudou turned the tables on his would-be attackers, and beat them up. I also told her that after the fight, the Class C kids filed a false report with the school. Ichinose listened to the story intently.

"So that's what happened. This story hasn't made its way to Class B yet. Hey, isn't this a pretty big problem, though? It doesn't really matter who lied since it's an issue about violence, right? Shouldn't you be hurrying to uncover the truth?"

"That's why we came here to look. But we haven't really found much."

"So you believe Sudou-kun because he's your classmate. And your friend, of course, that much is obvious. So Class D is in an uproar because Sudou is being falsely charged, right?"

She didn't know about Ryūen's trap part. Helping or not, I wasn't going to let Ryūen know that I had seen through his trap.

"What would you do if Sudou-kun was the liar? Suppose evidence came out that proved his guilt. What then?"

"I'd report on it honestly. After all, covering for a lie would only comeback to haunt us later."

"Yeah, okay. I think so, too." she is too naive.

"If Class B works with you, wouldn't that dramatically improve your credibility? Though I suppose the opposite could be true, too. Class D may suffer greater consequences if the truth's uncovered..." she wondered.

"So can I consider this an alliance between Class B and Class D?"

"I agree. Let's uncover the truth and protect the innocent." she said.

We exchange contact information and went our separate ways.

As I entered my room, I received a call from Kikyou.

""Sakura-san's digital camera was broken, right? I feel like I'm partially to blame since I made her so flustered. So I wanted to take responsibility for that..., that's the bullshit reason I gave her. She fell for it just as you said."

"So did she invite you? Or not."

"She was hesitant at first but she agreed. In one hour, we would meet. That camera is really important for her, isn't it. How did you know that?"

"Because she is a gravure idol." I said.

"She is a what? But she is so shy. I can't imagine her as a gravure model."

"It's there in the school data base. I searched her name and found her too. The glasses she wears are fake too."

"At this point, I will not be shocked if someone from our class turn out to be a prostitute."

"About that...."

"Don't tell me, really? Who?"

"It's not confirmed but there were some rumors. At least that's what mentioned in the data base. Anyways we are getting off topic. Am I invited?"

"Yes, for some reason. She asked me to invite you. How do you do such things?"

"My acting is better. People actually believe me as a genuine good guy, can't say that about someone who likes to just barge into my room and shout her head off."

"Hey, don't doubt my acting skills. It's just that they are lesser effective on females."

"Excuses, anyway I will meet you at the lobby in an hour."

I cut the phone and took out some snacks to eat.

I was waiting in the lobby when Kikyou arrived.

"Good evening!"

In the surrounding hustle and bustle, Kikyou drew nearer, a wide smile on her face.

She looked really cute in the casual attire. We started walking towards Keyaki mall where Sakura would meet us.

The students who passed us would occasionally steal a glance at Kushida in her casual clothes. In the case of passing couples, the girlfriend would appear upset and grab her boyfriend by the cheek.



Aside from the usual second years who tail me on Nagumo's orders some girls also stared at me. Even though I wasn't wearing anything special. I feel like Kei would have my head if she saw me like this.

"Ah. I think I might look a little out of place next to you," I muttered.

I could easily move. I looked simple. I didn't look that good next to Kikyou by any standard.

"No, no, that's not true at all. I think we're great together," she replied.

"So, you're saying someone simple like me is a good match for you? I should accept an insult like that?"

"Yeah."

"Okay, you can't say that."

"You're that surprisingly delicate, Kiyotaka? I don't really care what others say. I don't think it's an insult at all. I really think we suit each other."

"Still no comments on how I don't look simple or I look handsome."

She just winked at me. Sigh, I guess I am tired or else I would have never let this teasing go unchecked.

We were waiting for Sakura to arrive, It was the exact time we'd agreed to meet, but there still was no sign of her.

"How about we sit and wait?"

"Sure. Well... Hey, uh, isn't that Sakura-san sitting next to us?"

Sakura, clearly flustered and indeed sitting on the bench next to us, stood and gave a sheepish bow. Had Sakura really been sitting there the entire time? Amazing that we hadn't noticed her at all. Not a sign of her presence or aura.

If she is trained a little, she would make a fine spy.

"I'm sorry, I don't stand out much, I suppose... Good morning," Sakura said.

"No, I don't think you blend in too much. I definitely felt your presence," I said.

"Oh, you don't need to say that for my sake, Ayanokouji-kun."

Sakura was wearing a hat, and even a surgical face mask, which made it difficult to recognize her at a glance.

"You kind of look suspicious..."

"Rather than saying you look suspicious, I think you actually stand outmore."

"Yeah, I suppose so. I think I do stand out, especially here," Sakura responded. Sheepishly, she removed her mask.

"So anyway, about my digital camera. Is it okay if we go to the electronics store in the mall?" Sakura asked.

"Well, yes. We did certainly come here to get the camera fixed."

"I'm sorry...for making you come along with me." Sakura bowed apologetically, as though begging forgiveness from the bottom of her heart.

"Let's see, I'm sure they have a repair counter somewhere. Let's check it out."

While Kikyou headed towards the back of the store, I wondered just how many times she'd come here. Sakura and I followed close behind.

"I wonder if they'll fix it right away..." Sakura, looked rather anxious as she took out her digital camera and held it tight.

"You really love your camera, don't you?" I asked.

"Yeah. It's weird, isn't it?"

"No, not at all. It's a good hobby to have, isn't it? I get the feeling there's a significant story attached to that camera. It'd be great if they fixed it soon."

"Yeah."

"There it is! The repairs counter."

The store was crowded with a huge number of products and difficult to navigate. It didn't look like this store was much popular anymore. It may have to do with the sabotage done by yours truly.

Towards the back was the place where they handled repairs.

"Ah..."

For some reason, Sakura suddenly stopped in her tracks. When I glanced over at her, I noticed she was wearing an expression of blatant fear and revulsion. It seemed that something had upset her quite a bit. However, when I followed Sakura's line of sight, I saw nothing out of the ordinary.

"What's the matter, Sakura-san?" Kikyou asked. She also must've thought Sakura's behavior was strange.

"Ah, umm... Well..."

Although it seemed like she was about to say something, all Sakura did was shake her head and take a deep breath.

"It's nothing."

The first red flag, I noticed was how the store clerk was behaving. He quickly struck up a conversation with Kikyou like they were of the same age. He tried to ask Kikyou out for some kind of movie. I was not sure what he was trying to do, talking to an underage girl and asking her out.

Kikyou was clearly disgusted by him. Even though she didn't show it, I had gotten quite good at reading her real emotions. The only time she is more disgusted is while talking with any member of idiot company.

To escape the awkward situation, Kikyou urged Sakura to hand over the camera.

Fortunately, Sakura still had the warranty card. So the repairs would be free of cost.

Finally, all Sakura had to do was fill out her contact information, and we'd be done. But Sakura's hand suddenly stopped as she filled out the form.

"Sakura-san?" Kikyou, thinking that something strange was going on, called out to Sakura.

The Clerk, he had unsettling eyes. Even men would find it a little creepy. I understood what was happening here. Honestly I never thought that I will find this out while going through with my plan. But I am glad that I did, because if it remained unchecked. It would lead to the breakdown of Sakura, which would hurt the class.

"Can I see that for a second?" I asked.

"Huh?"

Standing next to Sakura, I reached for the pen she was holding. She didn't seem to understand why I wanted it, but she anxiously handed it over.

"When the repairs are finished, please contact me."

"H-hey, wait a minute. Contact you? She's the owner, isn't she? That would be..."

"The manufacturer warranty explicitly shows where the item was sold and the date of purchase. Also, I doubt there'd be any legal problems with me putting my information down. It should be perfectly fine if the user's name is different than the purchaser's."

Before the clerk could say "I understand", I'd entered my name and my dorm room number into the required fields.

"Or, is there a reason why she specifically has to enter her information?" I added, with a glare that would even frighten the instructors of that place.

"N-no, not at all. I understand. There's nothing to worry about," the clerk said.

Shortly after I'd completed the form, I handed it over with the

camera. Sakura gently patted her chest and sighed in apparent relief, but when she learned it'd take two weeks for the camera to be repaired, she grew discouraged. Her shoulders slumped.

"You know you should buy from One Stop, they have better staff members." I said to Sakura as we left the store.

To be continued.....

Biggest chapter yet. More than 4.7 k words.

I know that I said, I cannot update everyday. But it's like I have jinxed myself to write everyday.

Sakura is here and she will not be a wasted character like in LN. Although her growth wouldn't be instant and will be seen as time goes by.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-2 Ch-5 The Shy One

Reads: 1271 | Votes: 55 | Comments: 11

"That clerk sure was something else. He talked with such incredible passion, I was just so shocked," Kikyou said.

"Didn't you feel kind of disgusted?" Sakura asked.

"N-no, I wasn't disgusted by him. Do you know something? About that clerk?"

She didn't say anything to Kikyou.

"Th-thank you...Ayanokouji-kun. You really...saved me."

"Nah, I didn't really do anything. I just wrote down my address. When they contact me about the repairs, I'll get in touch with you right away, Sakura."

"Since you were with me today, Kushida-san, we completed our task without me having to talk at all. Thank you."

If Sakura had faced that store clerk one-on-one, she probably would've run away.

"Oh, no need to thank me. If you're okay with my help, then I'm happy to lend a hand any time. Sakura-san, you really like your camera. Don't you?"

"Yeah... I've liked cameras ever since I was little. My dad bought me one before I entered junior high, and I absolutely fell in love with it. Or I suppose you could say that I just love taking pictures... I'm not really well informed when it comes to this stuff, though."

"I think being knowledgeable and liking things are separate matters. It's wonderful to be so passionate about something."

"Sakura, you usually take pictures of landscapes, right? Do you ever take pictures of people?" Kikyou asked.

"Huh?!"

Sakura stepped backwards, looking quite flustered.

"Th-that's a secret."

"W-well, it's just... It's embarrassing," replied Sakura, her cheeks reddening. She looked down as she spoke.

As we were walking around the mall. I gave Kikyou a signal.

Suddenly, Kikyou froze while glancing over at Sakura's profile.

"Sakura-san, have we met somewhere before?" Kikyou murmured.

"Huh? N-no. I don't think so, but..."

"Sorry. It's just that when I look at you, I get this feeling that we've met before, Sakura-san. Hey, weird question, but could you try removing your glasses?"

"Huh?! B-but that's... My eyesight is so bad, I wouldn't be able to see a thing..." Sakura put her hand up and waved it, signaling to Kikyou that she did not want to.

"We should hang out together again, Sakura-san. Not just with me, but with my other friends, too."

"That's..." Sakura looked like she wanted to say something, but she couldn't find her way to the end of the thought. She said nothing.

"Umm... Thank you for everything today. You really helped me out," Sakura said.

"It's okay, it's okay. There's no need to thank us. Actually, Sakura-san, you can talk to us normally, you know? If it's okay with you. We're in the same grade. It sounds a little weird when you speak so formally to us."

"I didn't mean to sound that way. I wasn't aware of it... I sound weird?"

"It's not really a bad thing! I mean, I'd be happy if you didn't speak so formally to me, though."

"Ah... O-okay... I...I got it. I'll do my best."

"It's okay, though. You don't need to force yourself."

"I-It's okay. I...will."

"Well then, we'll see you at school. Okay?"

"Well!"

"About Sudou-kun... As my way of saying thanks for today, I... Well, that might be a little misleading, but if you like..."

"I-I may be able to help you with Sudou-kun's case." Sakura said in parts.

"So, does that mean that you saw Sudou-kun fight with those other students?"

"Yes. I saw everything. It was a total coincidence, though... I'm sure you don't believe me."

"No, we do. Why did you decide to tell us now, though? I mean, I'm happy you did, but I don't want you to force yourself. You don't have to do this just because you're grateful, you know?" Kikyou asked.

"It's okay... I think that if I kept quiet, I'd probably come to regret it. I...don't want to cause trouble for my classmates. But, if I spoke up as a witness, then...I would definitely stand out. I hated the thought of that... I'm sorry."

"Thank you, Sakura-san. I'm sure Sudou-kun will be really happy." Kikyou took Sakura's hand, and Sakura looked at Kikyou's smiling face.

We walked back to the dormitories. But I stayed back at the lobby.

After almost an hour had passed, I got a call. The name on the screen read "Sakura."

"Um... Hello. This is Sakura..."

"This is Ayanokouji."

"Thank you for coming out with me today," Sakura said.

"Oh, no problem. It wasn't really a big deal. Don't worry about it. You shouldn't fuss so much and keep thanking me."

"Okay..."

"What's the matter?"

"Umm..."

"If I was absent from school tomorrow, what do you think would happen?" she asked in a quiet voice.

"What do you mean?"

"W-what are you doing right now?" she asked another question rather than answering me.

"I-if it's okay with you, c-could we meet right now? I'm in room 1106."

"If you could keep this a secret from everyone... That would really help me out." she just rambled on.

"I'll head over there in about five minutes." I said and ended the call.

Looks like my calculations were correct. My first plan was to use Kikyou's power of friendship to involve Sakura. But when I saw her reject Kikyou. I formed another plan.

I instantly transferred some points to Hondou for bumping into Sakura. Making her camera drop. I knew that camera was important

to her because of her past.

Then I used Kikyou to set up this meeting, while I already predicted where she would go after the class. I along with Chiaki visited the place of incident. I purposefully bumped into Sakura making an impression of being a kind guy. But clearly differentiating myself from Kikyou. Kikyou asked her repeatedly about the incident whereas I only cared about her problems.

As planned, she invited me because she couldn't bare to be with Kikyou alone and she doesn't have any other friend she could invite.

Sakura could easily be overwhelmed in a conversation so I instructed Kikyou to take the lead. Most of the conversations were carried out by her. She even asked personal questions about her clearly making her uncomfortable. All the while I understood what she wanted without even speaking.

At the end, I expected her to say that she will give testimony but she would lose her confidence and try to chicken out.

That's where I come in.

It was nearly dark outside by now. I boarded the elevator and pressed the button for 11th floor.

"Pardon me for intruding..." I said at Sakura's door.

"Come on in." She greeted me wearing casual clothes.

"So. What did you need from me?"

"Umm... Ayanokouji-kun, do you remember what you said before? You said I wasn't obligated to step forward, even though I was the witness.You also said it was meaningless to force me to testify."

I gave a slight nod.

"I...just don't have any self-confidence after all."

"Is this about speaking in front of other people?"

"I've been terrible at it for so long... I'm not good at speaking in front of others. If I'm asked to testify in front of the teachers tomorrow, I don't think I'll have the confidence to answer properly. So..."

"So you're considering taking the day off from school?" Sakura gave a slight nod before collapsing and laying her fore head onto the table.

"Ahhhhh. Jeez, why am I so completely useless?!" She shrank into herself, clearly ashamed. It was the first time I'd seen her like that.

"Sakura, you're surprisingly high-strung, huh?"

I felt the gap between the person I saw now and her usual behavior.

"Huh?!" Sakura, realizing she'd let me see this side of her, blushed and shook her head.

"N-no! I'm not like that at all."

"Hey, can I ask you just one thing? Why did you call me?"

"That's because I'm not afraid of your eyes, Ayanokouji-kun..."

I tilted my head in confusion.

"Oh, no. I don't mean the eyes that you've seen me with. I mean the pupils, way back in the eyes... If you look someone deep in their eyes, you'll understand. I'm sorry, I can't really explain it well."

Does she have superpowers? Because if it is then it is really defective. She literally chose the most horrible human being to trust. Well most horrible would be a little exaggerated, I am no Hitler.

"Well, it's just... When I see a man...even if he seems kind...I suddenly get afraid."

"I know it would be good to simply say what it is I saw. But no matter what I do, I can't seem to imagine it... How can I speak that assertively?"

"If you want to quit, would you like me to talk?"

"You're not going to get mad?"

"I told you before, didn't I? If we forced you to testify, it would be meaningless."

"Umm... What do you think would be best to do, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"Sakura, do you have any physical evidence of the incident? Like a recording or a video."

"Yes, I took pictures of the incident. It's in the memory card of the camera."

"You did remove it before giving it for repairs, right?"

"Yes, yes. I did. But I still don't understand."

"Can you show me the pictures? We can insert the memory card in a laptop."

"I-I can't, I have some personal pictures in it. That's why I don't want to testify. I-I don't want to show it."

"Sakura, trust me. If my plan works, you won't have to show those pictures to anybody. You don't even need to testify."

I then proceed to explain my plan to her. By the end of it she agreed to trust me and handed over the memory card to me.

"A-Ayanokouji-kun, the pictures you will see in there. Please don't tell about it to anybody."

"Sakura, I know about your secret. It's completely safe with me."

At this her eyes widen and she went into a trance.

"H-How d-did you know?" Now her stuttering is getting worse.

"Few days ago, I saw Ike reading a magazine. In which I saw your picture. But don't worry, nobody else made that connection. I only did because of my observational skills."

"B-but, do you think of me as a horrible person for doing such things?" she asked.

At this moment she was so brittle that even a wrong word would break her.

"There is nothing to judge about, everyone has their own right to do whatever they want to do. I certainly don't care about what you do. But what I care about is for you to be okay."

She started crying, which in hindsight. A lot of girls have been doing that around me, I wonder why?

"T-Thank you, Ayanokouji-kun. I thought if someone knew about what I do, they would shun me. They will be disgusted by me."

I closed the distance and hugged her. She became a statue.

"Sakura, there are many people in this world who might do that. But there are many more who would accept you and love you. Do you understand? Never think of yourself as a loner. Try talking with more people and who knows you will be surrounded by people who admire you and want to be your friend."

"Show this world the real you, make them notice that Sakura Airi is an outstanding person."

I let go of her before the situation could turn awkward.

"It might be presumptuous for me to say this, but I think that we're like friends. We are," I said.

"We're friends? Really?" she whispered.

"If you don't think so, Sakura, then that's different."

"No... It does make me happy...to hear you say that," replied Sakura, while still looking somewhat perplexed.

"Hey, why are you surprised?"

"It's just that I never expected my first friend to be the most popular

boy in our class and our leader."

"Don't worry, I am not some prophet. I am just a guy trying to lead this class to victory. But I really want you to be the real you. I want everybody in this school to see, what I see."

"Thank you, Ayanokouji-kun. I promise that from now on I will become someone better. I will not remain useless, I will not drown myself in despair. I will not let you down."

With each word her confidence grew. It was like seeing a birth of a whole new person.

"I have just one request, don't do it for me. Do it for yourself."

After finishing all the chores, finally it was time for giving finishing touches to my plan.

I sat down with my laptop and inserted the memory card in it. As I searched through the pictures of Sakura. I saw creativity, honestly if Sakura wanted she could become a professional photographer. Putting aside the rather revealing angles. She really know the best ways to take a picture.

Finally, I found the photo that I was searching for. There were several shots. The fighting was clearly shot and the individuals were visible.

There was also a shot of Sakura with the fight happening in the background. I selected all the photographs other than the one with Sakura and saved a copy of it.

Then, I emailed those pictures to someone with all the instructions attached and transferred 40,000 points to the said individual.

After checking out if the email was received. I moved on to the next task.

I d looked at Sakura Airi's - I mean, the gravure idol Shizuku's - blog. As I read through the past entries, I saw that she had started

blogging about two years ago. Precisely around the time that Sakura started working as a gravure idol. Her hopes and aspirations for the future were spelled out in writing. I didn't see anything that especially stuck out, no red flags. I checked out other idol blogs just for reference, but they seemed similar. This is like a whole new world here.

I had to wonder, how would it have felt for a second-year junior high student to debut in the entertainment world? During one year, she'd updated the blog almost every single day. She wrote about what happened that day and her thoughts. She also responded to almost every single comment from her fans. But, just as I'd expected, she stopped replying after being accepted to this school.

She had strictly adhered to the rule about contacting anyone outside the school. Although she wasn't really the direct center of attention, Sakura seemed more popular than I had imagined. She had over 5000 followers on Twitter. Many of them were fans that wanted her to return to doing gravure magazines really soon, or asked if she had any plans to appear on television. Among those many comments, a post from three months ago snagged my attention.

"Do you believe in fate? I do. I believe we will be together forever."

It that had been the only message, it would've been the delusional fantasy of a fan. But there was more every day, and it escalated quickly.

"I can always feel you close to me."

"You were even cuter today, huh?"

"Did you notice when our eyes met? I noticed."

If Sakura saw this, those words would frighten her. I couldn't believe that people could be this degenerates. I was sure that this poster was the clerk from the electronic store after I seeing the next post.

"Look, God is real after all." attached with it was a picture of Sakura

beside me and Kushida. It was taken in the store today.

"It's so mean for you to ignore me! Or perhaps you just didn't notice me?"

"What are you doing now? I want to meet you, I want to meet you, I want to meet you!"

I messaged Sakura to give me a call in the case of emergency. It wasn't much but if she was in a situation where she needed help at least she would remember to call me.

Today was the day of the hearing. Every pieces were in place. Even though the class didn't know about anything, they still were spirited due to Kikyou and Yousuke.

"Man, it really is hot today..."

That place taught me to endure the worst of conditions but they didn't tell me how hot it would get during summer. The uniform with the blazer was cooking me.

I noticed something on the bulletin board by the stairway's landing, a little in front of the shoe cubbies. A paper on the board said that they were looking for students with information related to Sudou and Class C.

Oh, right. I never informed anything to Class B. So they are still looking for evidence.

As I scanned the message, I was quite impressed...

They were offering points to helpful informants. In that case, even apathetic students would pay attention.

"Good morning, Ayanokouji-kun!" Ichinose called out from behind me.

She must have just arrived.

"I saw the paper on the bulletin board. I assume you posted it, Ichinose?"

Ichinose joined me in looking at the board. She appeared deeply interested.

"Hmm. I see, I see. So there's this method, too."

"Huh? This wasn't you?"

I'd thought that surely this was her strategy.

"This was probably- Ah, he's here! Good morning, Kanzaki-kun."

Ichinose raised her hand up and signaled to a lone male student. The boy noticed Ichinose, and approached us with quiet steps.

"Did you put this up, Kanzaki-kun?"

"Yeah. I made and posted it yesterday. Is there something wrong?"

"Oh, no. Not at all. My friend here just wanted to know who did it. Ah, I'll introduce you two. Kanzaki-kun from Class B, this is Ayanokouji-kun the class leader of Class D."

"Nice to meet you, Kanzaki."

His demeanor was stiff, but he appeared to be a serious student. He had violet-bluish hair and purple eyes.

"How's it going, Kanzaki-kun? Did you get anything reliable?"

"Unfortunately, I haven't received any useful information."

"I see. Well, how about we look at the bulletin board."

"At the bulletin board? Did you put up another poster?"

Ichinose wore a thin smile, indicating it was something else.

"Have you ever checked out the school homepage? There's a message board. I requested that people come forward with information there. I said that if there anyone witnessed a violent

incident at our school, I'd like to hear about it."

After she said that, Ichinose showed us her phone's screen. It showed a message seeking out witnesses, as well as a count for the number of people who'd viewed it. The displayed number was still only in the dozens, but it was much more efficient than asking people directly. Also, the message posted to the homepage offered compensation to witnesses and people withhelpful information.

"Ah, regarding the stuff about points, don't worry. We just decided to do that on our own. Besides, it will probably be difficult for us to get new information now. Today is the hearing. Ah!"

"What's the matter?"

"It looks like I just got two messages regarding the post. There might be a little information."

Ichinose checked her phone for confirmation. After she'd read the messages, a slight smile crept onto her face.

"Just like this."

She showed me her phone so I could read the message for myself.

"It looks like one of the boys from Class C, Ishizaki-kun, was a bad seed in junior high. He was good at fighting, and terrorized the locals. A kid from his hometown probably leaked this."

"Interesting," Kanzaki muttered, also reading the message.

"Kanzaki-kun, what do you think?"

"Perhaps they let Sudou beat them up on purpose. If the three of them had wanted to set a trap for Sudou, the story would make perfect sense. The connection seems natural."

"Yeah, I think so too. I knew you'd figure it out, Kanzaki-kun. Great work. If we can verify this information, then we could be one step closer to proving Sudou-kun's innocence. But what we have is still pretty weak, isn't it?"

"Yeah. Even if we managed to convince people with this new evidence, we're really only halfway there. The fact that it was such a onesided fight definitely puts a lot of pressure on us."

"There've been no reports of another witness, just as I thought. It would've been interesting if one had stepped forward, but I suppose it was tough. We're out of time. Our only choice now is to wait for more information from either the Internet or the bulletin board until noon, right?"

"Guys, I really appreciate your help but from here on Class D will handle the situation. The hearing will be after classes, so I have still some time to prepare for it. Don't worry for us, whatever may happen we will accept it." I said to them.

Both of them looked at me with concern. After all this case was already over without any evidence.

"I am really sorry, Ayanokouji-kun. You helped our class during the mid terms and we couldn't even help you get out of this situation." Ichinose said with guilt clear on her face.

"Hey, its not over until it's over. Maybe, I will need your help in the future. So there is no need to feel guilty about it."

"You are truly kind, Ayanokouji-kun. Anyway, we'll have to transfer points over to anyone who provides us with information. Ah, but what if someone does so anonymously? In that case, how would we transfer over the points?"

"I can tell you, if you'd like. Do you want me to?" I said.

"Do you know something, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"I just remembered something when I was messing around on my phone. Do you know the person's number?"

"It's a toll-free number, but I remember it."

Ichinose drew close and pointed at her phone. Being this near to somebody usually made people feel defenseless. I'd thought that a girl wouldn't want a man to be in her intimate space...and I didn't

know exactly what it was, but Ichinose had a pleasant scent about her.

"Here, open up the points remittance screen. You should see your ID number in the upper left corner."

As I was instructing her, I noticed how close we were. Her lethal weapons were in contact with my body. I don't know what came over me, but I really wanted to touch them. I shook myself out of the dangerous thoughts. Thankfully, Ichinose hadn't noticed where my eyes were focused.

"Umm..." Ichinose's fingers were nimble. She pressed the button to open up her own points page. After the page loaded, it was displayed on the screen.

"Yep, yep. There it is. So what should I do now that I can see the ID number?"

"From your ID number, you can issue a temporary token key. If you open that, and send the key, you should get a request for payment."

"I see. Thank you!"

"You are welcome. I think we should head towards our classes now. It's getting late."

"Sure." Ichinose started walking.

The information that she received from the anonymous informant was already known by me. It was Miyake Akito, one of my friends who had told me about this. They were from the same locality. I guess Miyake did this to earn some extra points and who am I to deny him that. Smart guy.

In a way, it was a theft from the class that helped us but it's okay. After what I noticed on Ichinose's mobile screen, even I wouldn't feel guilty about it.

Moreover any points credited into Class D was welcomed. Even if we have to steal it from a pretty girl. Yes, I am that petty.

As I entered the classroom, I was surrounded by my classmates.

"Ayanokouji-kun, will we win."

"Please, Ayanokouji-kun do something. I really don't want to go back to 0 points."

"Ayanokouji-kun, you are our last hope. Save us."

"Guys, don't worry. I will do my best to win it. But even if we don't, there's nothing to despair about. We are fighters, we will fight with everything we have to reach Class A."

This improved there mood a lot.

"In the meeting, Sodou would be accompanied by Kikyou, Chiaki and me. Others, I don't have to repeat it. But study hard for the exams."

I finally took my seat and started re-running the simulations for perfection. Today is the day of making or breaking.

And I don't intend to lose.

Back to back chapters of more than 4 k words.

At this point, I am surprised by myself. But it's late and I am tired.

Next chapter will be an important one so I will take a two days break. I am exhausted literally.

So, anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day

Vol-2 Ch-6 The Convincer

Reads: 1109 | Votes: 55 | Comments: 25

As the bell rang, signalling the end of class. Kikyou, Chiaki and I stood up.

I went towards Sodou. His face showed his nervousness.

"Sodou, listen to me carefully. Don't say anything at the meeting, I repeat do not open your mouth to speak."

In any other situation, he would have tried to fight me on this, but he knew that his future in this school depends on me.

"Hey Sodou, wish us luck. We're are going on a date with Yajima and Okabe. Oh, I can't wait to do naughty things with her." said Yamauchi.

"My future is on the line here and you guys are going on a date! At least wish me luck." Sodou said.

"Oh, yeah. You had a meeting today to decide your punishment right? We totally forgot about that. But don't worry, when we have our girlfriends. We will help you out." Ike said without an ounce of shame.

Sodou looked like he would crush them to death, if I didn't stop him another tragedy would await him.

"Sodou, let's go. We don't have time for this."

Sodou, Chiaki and I left the classroom. Kikyou said she would be joining us in a while.

The discussion was scheduled to begin at 4:00 PM. It was already 3:50 PM. We couldn't afford to take it slow.

As we reached the top floor of the club building. We saw Chabashira-sensei standing outside of what looked like a conference room. The reception desk was void of the angry senpai.

"So, are you ready Sodou? Everyone is already inside." she asked.

But Sodou remained silent. Looks like he is taking my advice rather seriously.

Sae then looked at me with questioning eyes. I gave her a nod that said 'Don't worry, I got this.' By that time Kikyou also joined us and we entered the room.

"Did you do it?"

"Yes, but you owe me a lot for this one. It was the most disgusting thing I ever did."

"Now you are just being melodramatic, Kikyou."

We ended our conversation and sat down in the seats. I opened the file I had received from Manabu in front of me and started playing with a pen. I observed the environment carefully.

It was a rectangular table with Manabu sitting at the head of the table. On his left was Nagumo Miyabi and his right seat was occupied by Tachibana Akane.

Sae sat down beside Tachibana followed by Kikyou, me, Sodou and Chiaki. On the other side Class C's homeroom teacher Sakagami was followed by Ishizaki, Kondou and Komiya.

Looks like Ryūen wanted to stay hidden for this one.

"Sorry we're late," our sensei said.

"It's before the scheduled start time. There's no need for apologies." said Sakagami.

"Well then, I would now like to discuss the violent incident that occurred last Saturday with the members of the student council, the involved parties, and their homeroom teachers. You may begin the

proceedings, student council secretary Tachibana." Manabu announced in a professional manner.

Secretary Tachibana summarized the situation from both sides in an easy- to-understand manner. There wasn't any need for further explanation.

"Based on the aforementioned facts, we would like for you to identify which version of events is true."

After completing her explanation and the preface to the proceedings, Secretary Tachibana turned her eyes toward us in Class D.

"Komiya-kun and two other members of the basketball club went to the special building after Sudou-kun called them there. There, they claim to have been beaten up in a one-sided brawl. Is this true?"

"What those guys sa-" Sodou instantly stopped speaking when I gave him a glare.

"I would first like to know the story from the supposed victim's side." I said.

"Sodou-kun called us over to the special building."

"Is that the whole story? Why don't you guys walk us through what happened step by step." I said.

"Well, Sodou is better at basketball than we are, so he's always bragging about it. We practice with everything we've got, but it doesn't exactly feel good when he makes fools out of us. So we often butt heads."

"Kondou and I don't know why he called us over. When we'd just finished up for the day and were changing, he said he wanted to talk to us for a minute. Wasn't the reason just that he didn't like us?"

"You are saying that Sodou was the one who called you both to the special building, yes?"

They nodded. Sodou desperately wanted to deny but he couldn't.

"Do you have any witnesses that saw Sodou asking you to meet at the special building?"

"No, it was late and most of the people had already left."

Hmm. They are very well trained.

"So, I expect Sodou called just you both as only you two are in the basketball club. Then what was Ishizaki doing there? He isn't in the club or have any prior relation with Sodou."

"That's... I came as a precaution. There were rumors that Sudou was violent. He's also in better shape than we are, physically. I had to go, didn't I?"

"I see. So you brought along Ishizaki as your bodyguard, since he was reputed to be rather good at fighting. Just in case there was an emergency."

"It was to protect ourselves. That was it. Besides, we didn't know that Ishizaki-kun was known for being good in a fight. We just considered him a reliable friend."

"Hmm. If you knew that Sodou has violent tendencies, why did you agree to meet him?"

"We just wanted to settle this matter in peace. That's why, he is the one who attacked us!"

"However did he attacks you, can you describe it? I have read the file and the one thing that was missing was the description of the fight."

At this they started to fidget in the chair. None of them could answer this question without arousing suspicions.

"He just took all of us by surprise!"

"Then why didn't you call for help? There were three of you, even after the initial surprise. One of you could have tried to escape.

Sodou has only two hands, how can he restrict three people from escaping?"

"I-I, he's Sodou. Common sense doesn't apply on him. He is like a wild animal."

"Let me ask a question to the president. Consider a scenario where you are trying to attack three individual all at once. You are not known for being smart. You attack like a wild animal and have a short fuse. What would you do in such a scenario. You can answer as well vice-president."

Manabu remained silent but Nagumo answered.

"I guess take one of them out of the fight before the surprise wears off."

"Is that the thought process of someone who doesn't have much brain?" I questioned him.

"Which brings me to the next point, what are the chances that in a one on three fight. Sodou remained unscathed. He didn't even had a scratch?"

"We didn't intend to fight."

"You didn't intend to fight? Then why did you bring Ishizaki? You just said that he accompanied you guys for protection, so why didn't he protect, he didn't even tried. Even if I am the biggest pacifist in the world, I would at least try to defend myself."

At this point they were out of answers. One wrong move, one wrong word and they would be trapped.

"I think it's enough. You are clearly making them uncomfortable here. It is clear that Sodou attacked and harmed three students of Class C. There injuries are solid proof whereas you are just trying to escape this predicament by talking about unnecessary things." said Sakagami.

"I am confused, are you a student? I thought only the students had the say in this meeting. Isn't that the school's goal. To test if the

students are capable of resolving there matters." I asked.

"Sakagami, I would request you to not interfere in the discussion. Your students are quite capable of speaking." said Sae.

"Look, we were the one who got injured. Even though we didn't defend ourselves. Sodou is the one who lured us into a trap and harmed us." Ishizaki said mustering up some confidence.

"About that, did Sodou really invite you? I mean someone with a intellectual level of Sodou would invite you to the washroom or alleyway perhaps. Why would he invite you to the special building?"

"If you want to have a fight then it the special building would be the perfect place. It has a lower number of surveillance camera. Most of the time it is empty and the extreme heat interfere with one's rational thinking. Did Sodou really think all of that?" I asked.

"These questions prove nothing, unless you have some solid proof to show. Then this is just a waste of our time. I would request the president to take a decision based on the undeniable fact that my students were injured." said Sakagami.

Sae was going to interrupt Sakagami but I stopped her.

"Who said that we don't have a solid proof. President with your permission, I would like to call upon a witness to this incident."

I expected a little bit of surprise on their faces but miraculously they were indifferent to it.

I signaled Kikyou to go out and invite the witness in. She left the room and a few moments later entered again with a platinum haired girl following her.

This got a reaction out of everyone in the room. Even Manabu and Nagumo.

"What are you doing here, Kiryūin?" Nagumo was the first one to speak.

"Why, I am here to testify about the incident." Fūka replied.

"But it's too out of character for you to bother with such things? Why the change of heart?" Nagumo asked with suspicion.

"True, but I might do it for some points. During one of my after school adventures, I came up on the fight between these children. I witnessed all of it and even though I wouldn't have bothered to do anything. Nazuna told me that her boyfriend was looking for a witness."

"So, I just told her that I am the witness. So, Kiyotaka here contacted me and asked me to testify. But since I don't do anything unless it benefits me, so he sent me 40,000 points to be here. You can check my account credit details." she explained to everyone.

What Fūka said was in a way partial truth. The photos I got from Sakura, I had sent them to Fūka along with 40,000 points. There is no way of knowing who actually took the picture and Fūka was the only one I knew who could not only survive questions from Manabu, Nagumo and the teacher but she would even make them uncomfortable. I just had to give them a reason to believe that Fūka would help me while staying true to her nature. Although, I don't think being called as Nazuna's boyfriend would make Nagumo like me more.

"We are supposed to believe that you were present during the incident. You could be lying for all we know." said Sakagami.

Oh, he's done. Till now I was letting it happen but he's just annoying.

"Who are you again?" Fūka asked.

"I am the homeroom teacher of Class C."

"You don't look like a teacher, I guess the girls in your class would feel unsafe after having you as there teacher. Anyways, I have a picture to prove that I was present."

"Why would you take a picture, you said that you didn't expect to testify. Isn't that suspicious." Nagumo said.

I guess now he just wants me to lose.

"Why wouldn't I? I enjoy seeing people fight. It's really entertaining to see people punch each other for some petty reasons. I would have even recorded it if it was any good. But this one was just one sided."

Fūka took out her phone and showed the picture to everybody. Manabu observed the picture carefully.

"Now, if that's out of the way. I would like to officially state about what happened there."

Tachibana took a white page and gave Fūka the signal to speak.

"It was around 6:15 pm when the incident took place. On the third floor of the special building. It was hot and humid, which reminds me. Please inform the school that I have submitted a complaint about the extremely high temperature at that place."

"I second that." I said.

"Please refrain from deviating from the topic here." Tachibana said with a glare.

"Yes. So, I stumbled upon these kids here arguing with each other. The Class C students threatened Sodou to quote on quote leave the basketball club or there would be a lot of pain in your future. The arguments spiralled from there."

"Sodou did his best to control himself but when this guy here threw a punch, at least he tried to." she pointed at Kondou.

"Sodou acted to defend himself. From there on the Class C students stopped doing anything and took the hits like they wanted to get injured." she said while leaning back in her chair.

"It could still be a lie. Yes, because of the photograph it could be said that she was there but the picture doesn't tell who threw the first punch or who threatened whom." said Sakagami.

"She could be lying. It is established that she did this because of

points. Maybe Class D bought her testimony."

This guy again.

"Moreover, could she be considered as a witness. Class D never claimed to have a witness but suddenly they present one without prior notice." he continued speaking.

"You know that your desperation is leaking through. It was well established that teachers may not interfere. But I guess, you would have to do so to save your pitiful students. They don't even have enough brain cells to lie properly." I gave him a look.

"So, what do you think, Chabashira-sensei? Why not look for a compromise here?" Sakagami-sensei asked.

"Compromise?"

"I'm convinced that Sudou-kun lied in his testimony. No matter how long we go back and forth, we'll never reach an agreement. We won't change our testimony, and your side won't give up or admit that you conspired with the witness. In other words, you won't stop. It'll be an endless cycle of saying that the other side is lying. In addition, the picture is too inconclusive to be considered definitive proof. Therefore, I suggest we compromise. I do think that the students from Class C are responsible for some of the blame here. There were three students up against Sudou, and one of them has a history of fighting, which is a problem. So how about two weeks of suspension for Sudou-kun, and one week of suspension for my students? What do you think of that? The weight of the punishment is different, of course, but I think that matches the difference in sustained injuries."

"No, there is no way we are letting your class free. We have the upper hand here, why should we compromise." I replied before Sae.

"This whole situation was a trap set up by Class C to trap Sodou and make our class lose points. I claim that Sodou is completely innocent. Therefore, I will not accept his suspension from school, even for a day. Moreover, I want compensation for my class due to the inconvenience caused by the Class C students. That's my final

answer." I declared.

"Ha ha... What can I even say? We did this intentionally? What a bizarre claim. Apparently, the Class D representative can't help but spew nonsense." he said laughing condescendingly at me.

"And Apparently an 40 years old man have to give it his all to argue with a 16 year old student. How do you think the school will react when they hear that you meddled in a students matter. Now shut your mouth for your own benefit." said Sae. I don't think I have ever seen her this angry before. Even Ike and Yamauchi gets better treatment.

"That's enough. Continuing this discussion would just be a waste of time." Horikita Manabu looked at us as if we were just swapping lies in a giant mudslinging match.

"What I've learned today is that each side has an exact opposite claim.In that case, one side is propagating an extremely malicious falsehood."

"I'll ask you, Class C. Have you lied to us today?"

"Of...of course not!"

"Well, what about you, Class D?"

"I haven't lied. Everything we've said has been the truth."

"Then we will regroup here for a retrial tomorrow at 4:00 PM. If by then it hasn't been clearly established which party has lied, or in the event no one admits that they were at fault, we will pass judgment based on the evidence we've collected thus far. Of course, in that case we may have to consider the possibility of expulsion from this school. That is all."

We were told to leave. Everyone looked dissatisfied as they exited the conference room. Sakagami-sensei approached Fūka who was about to leave.

"I want you to reflect on the fact that many students will be involved in this due to your lies. Also, if you think that we'll go easy

on you because you are a girl then I am afraid you are being foolish. You should be ashamed of yourself."

"Piss off, old man. You have already irritated me enough with your annoying voice." she said that and left.

Sakagami was shocked hearing that.

"You know if you report what she said to the school then I will report that you are trying to sabotage my witness. Nobody other than you and me heard what she said. So think carefully, you are already on thin ice." I said to him covering for Fūka. After what she did for me, this was the least I could do.

Sakagami gave me a final glare and left with his students. The Class C students repeatedly complained that the witness's lies were far too much on their way out, almost as if they wanted the members of the student council to hear them. Silence enveloped the student council room immediately afterward.

"You're still here?" Manabu and Secretary Tachibana came out of the conference room. Nagumo had already left.

"What are you planning to do?"

"What do you mean?" I asked.

"I thought when you asked me for that favor, you'd unveil some kind of master plan."

"What do you think, I am Sherlock Holmes or Hercule Poirot who would solve any case." I asked him.

"So, all of the things that you did was just on impulse?"

"I never said that."

"I see, now I would ask you all to leave the student council office. Tachibana would like to close it."

We all left the club building. On the way Sodou started talking.

"Hey, I really appreciate that you stood up for me. Also I would like to apologize for landing you all into this mess. I guess, I have to work a lot on my anger issues." he said apologetically.

"It's too late, Sodou. If we had any chance to win this, it would have been today. But they successfully postponed it. Now we don't have any surprise cards or any new revealing proof. So there's a high chance that tomorrow could be your last day at this school." I said to him with a look of pity.

"What? They can't do that. When you asked them those questions, they were speechless. That proves they were lying." he said frantically.

"Still it's not physical evidence. It's over Sodou. They have the high ground."

Sodou looked like he was loosing it. When two of my classmates came running towards us. It was Okitani and Professor.

"Ayanokouji, we have a big problem." said Professor breathlessly.

I am back, just after a day.

This one was hard to write this one as I was exhausted after that continuous streak of chapters and couldn't write anymore.

It was like my brain just stopped working whenever I started to write this. I have been trying to write this chapter since last Thursday.

Hopefully now my brain starts working again. Although I can't promise but updates will either be everyday or with a gap of single day.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-2 Ch-7 The Sleight

Reads: 1105 | Votes: 58 | Comments: 16

Yamauchi POV-

Today is the day when the greatest of all time soccer player aka me gets a girlfriend. Since I was little I had many girlfriends, the female population used to surround me like a bee to a-a you know what I don't know.

I met Ike in the classroom and the whole day we discussed our plans for our date with the girls.

My classmates think that I am a loser, but once Yajima becomes my girlfriend. I will show them that I am the most smartest and handsomest guy in the world.

When the classes ended Ike and me get up and meet our friend Sodou. I still remember the day he begged me to be his friend.

"Hey Sodou, wish us luck. We're are going on a date with Yajima and Okabe. Oh, I can't wait to do naughty things with her." I said. I predict that due to my undeniable hotness, she will agree to do naughty things with me in no time.

I wonder how it feels to do naughty stuff with a girl. I mean I already know, I have been with lots of women. I am very experienced in this stuff.

"My future is on the line here and you guys are going on a date! At least wish me luck." Sodou said.

Sheesh, I get it you have some worthless things to do but the videos I watch could turn into reality today. At least congrats me.

Soon, we left him on his own. As Ike and me get ready to leave. Kushida-chan stops us.

"Ike-kun and Yamauchi-kun, I heard you were going on a date with some girls." she said.

"Yes, yes. But don't worry Kushida-chan, I would never cheat on you. Just this one time." Ike said.

"What do you mean, Ike-kun?"

"N-nothing."

That loser is still stuck on one girl. I guess he isn't handsome like me who had done naughty stuff with a lot of girls. A Lot.

Kushida-chan gave us advice to help us in our date while I stared at her big boobies.

"Thank you, Kushida-chan. We will listen to what you said."

Before leaving Kushida-chan gave both of us a hug. I was hard when I felt her boobies on my chest.

Then Ike and I made our way to the location of our private date. At the rooftop. When we reached there only Yajima had arrived and Okabe was missing.

"Hey, Yajima-chan. I guess you are excited to go on a date with me, hug?" I asked with my signature smile.

"Yes, Yamauchi-kun. I am very excited." she said. Although her face didn't show any excitement. I guess she is nervous being near me.

"Yajima-chan when will Okabe-chan be here, she is late." Ike said.

"Don't worry Ike-kun. She isn't here, but I am. I will satisfy all your needs. Both of you, I am yours." she said seductively.

Holy cow, my fantasies are turning real!

"Y-Yajima-chan, what are you saying?" asked a nervous Ike.

"I said what you heard. I will do anything you want, even the naughty stuff. Just tell me to. I am yours, take me Ike-kun and

Yamauchi-kun." she whispered.

Ike and I shared a look of joy. Even though I have to share her with this ugly guy, I will do anything to see a girl naked. We started touching her. I went to kiss her when she suddenly started screaming.

"Help! Somebody help! Please, save me." she cried.

Huh? What?

Suddenly, some boys who looked like students came out of nowhere and tackled us.

"Hey, what are you doing? Don't interrupt our good times." I cried.

"Ryūen-kun, these are the boys who called us here to rape us. Thankfully, we reached in time to save Yajima-san. Or else who knows what they could have done to her." said Okabe. Where did she come from? And rape?

"Good work Okabe for telling us about it. You both trash, I will destroy you both." said the Ryūen guy.

"Why, we did nothing wrong. She is the one who told us to do whatever we want with her." I explained.

"He is lying, they started touching me forcefully and said that if I didn't let them have me. Then they would destroy my life." Yajima started crying.

'What! No you are lying." Ike shouted.

"That's enough. Ibuki, do you have the video?"

"Yes, I have it." a short blue haired girl said as she stopped recording.

"You okay there, Yajima? I don't think this would have been a pleasant experience for you." said the Ryūen guy.

"I have had worse with those older guys. So this was nothing."

"What is happening here, can anybody please tell us?" I said. Ike agreed with me.

"I amazed by how dumb you both are, Albert beat them up in a manner that even there mother wouldn't recognize them."

"What! No, we will complain to the school about this." Ike said.

But that didn't stop that huge guy from approaching us.

What followed was the most painful experience in my life.

Back to Ayanokouji POV

"What happened? Why are you both out of breath?" I asked.

"Ike and Yamauchi, they were ambushed. You told us to follow them. But the Class C students stopped us and forced us to leave." explained Professor.

This is bad, proving Sodou innocent was hard enough but now this. I didn't think Ryūen would be this smart.

Professor and Okitani led the way towards the location where they last saw Ike and Yamauchi.

As we reached the rooftops. We could see two figures lying on the ground. They were bloody and beaten badly.

Kikyou instantly gasped, some tears were leaking out of her eyes.

"What the heck, those Class C students. I am going to kill them, how dare they!" shouted Sodou.

"Sodou, what did you just said about working on your anger issues?" I reminded him.

"But they beat our friends, we are not gonna let that go, right?" he said.

"There must be some for them to beat Ike and Yamauchi. I don't

think Ryūen is that reckless." said Chiaki.

Suddenly there was a loud groan from Ike. He slowly opened his blacken eyes.

"Where am I? Why do I feel like I got hit by a truck?" the words escaped from his mouth. His lips were split open.

"Ike-kun, are you okay? I was so worried." Kikyou hugged Ike. His body stiffened like he was afraid that Kikyou would kill him.

Soon, Yamauchi woke up too. He got the same treatment from Kikyou and his reaction was the same as Ike.

"Ike and Yamauchi, what happened here? Tell me in detail." I said.

After hearing there story, my worst fear came true. There is no way, I could save them from sexual harassment allegations.

This was the end of Class D. Okay that was a little dramatic but the class wouldn't be too sad if these two were gone.

After a while, the school security guards came and arrested Ike and Yamauchi.

"What's going to happen to them?" I asked to the guard who looked like the man in charge for this situation.

"A complaint has been filled by Yajima Mariko for sexual harassment against Ike Kanji and Yamauchi Haruki. The school deals with these types of matter very seriously. They are been taken into captivity and will be held in the lock up at the school security office. There case would be reviewed by the director of the school and if he deems it that they are guilty of the offense, they would be expelled from the school and handed over to the local police department. From there the case would be handled by them." he explained.

"So, if we have any chances to prove them innocent, we would have to convince the director?"

"Yes, but think carefully before appealing for their innocence.

Because if they are found actually guilty then your class would be severely punished for trying to protect a offender."

"We didn't do anything, please. Please save us Ayanokouji." Yamauchi and Ike started crying. Honestly the scene was very ugly to look at.

"Why should I? You are nothing but a hindrance to our class. Even if I tried and you are found guilty then the whole class would have to suffer for it. Until and unless the whole class agrees in majority to save you. I can't do anything." I said.

Seeing there life flashing before there eyes. They suddenly started kneeling and touching there heads to the ground.

"Please, Ayanokouji. If you don't save us, our life would be over. We will never the same, we will go to prison. Please, I beg you."

Everyone except for the guards were looking at them with pity.

"You do know that because of your reputation, no one in the class would agree to save you. In fact you are known as the creepy degenerates who always thinks about girls and their bodies. They are more likely to believe that you are guilty."

"I even warned you about this being a trap, but you never listen. Give me one reason for saving you both."

Hearing this there spirit broke. They already imagined there bleak future. Honestly, I would have felt bad for them but they are in this situation due to their own stupidity.

The security guards then took them away leaving us standing there, wondering what just happened.

Soon, I broke this news in the official class group chat and the response was as expected.

If Ike and Yamauchi ever read this messages they would want to voluntarily drop out.

Everyone had separated and gone there own ways. I was walking

back to the dormitories when I saw Sakura sitting on a bench. She looked like she was waiting for someone.

As I approached her, she looked up and saw me. Before she could stand up, I sat down beside her.

"Hey, so how did the meeting go?" she asked. It was already a big change from yesterday. She was talking without stuttering and looked at me in the eyes.

"It went okay, but there is very little hope of saving Sodou. The evidence we provided wasn't conclusive. So, tomorrow the decision would be taken. With the added pressure of Sodou getting expelled."

Seeing her confused face, I told everything that happened at the meeting to her. By the end of it her face showed sadness and disappointment. She was dissapointed in herself.

"Only if I had the guts to testify myself. Maybe I could have saved Sodou-kun, but my pathetic self is useless." she said with a bitter smile.

"It's not your fault, Sakura."

"But.. I.. "

"I will say it one more time, it's not your fault."

She lowered her head once more, like she didn't want anyone to see her tears.

"I believe in you. I'm grateful of you, because you gave us a fighting chance. Without your pictures as a proof, Sodou's fate would have been sealed today itself." I said to her.

"I believe you because you're my friend." She looked away.

I put my hand on her cheeks. Turning her face around somewhat forcibly, I tried to make her look me in the eye.

I repeated it with conviction. I told her, "Do it for yourself."

"I let you see something so embarrassing... again.."

Sakura, walking next to me, had stopped crying. She now wore a sheepish smile.

"It's been such a long time since I cried in front of someone, but I have cried twice in two days in front of you. I feel a little relieved, actually." she said.

"I'm glad. When I was a kid, I used to cry in front of people all the time."

"I had no idea that you were like that, Ayanokouji-kun. That's completely unlike the image I have of you."

"Yeah, I cried a lot. Maybe 10 or 20 times in front of other people."

I wish that was the truth but that place made me a stranger to such feelings. However, I do believe that people who cried could grow stronger and move forward.

Sakura seemed to be the type who bottled up her feelings. This incident might have been an important step forward for her

"I was really happy...when you said that you believe in me. "

"It's not just me. Chiaki and Kikyou do, too."

"Yeah... But you came out and told me directly, Ayanokouji-kun. You said it."

Sakura wiped her eyes once again, probably because the tears blurred her vision.

"You gave me courage. I was happy," she said, with a small smile.

When I heard that, I felt relieved. Even if I could've saved Sudou just by forcing Sakura to come forward and pushing her into an uncomfortable situation, it wouldn't have been a perfect solution. The two of us lapsed into silence. However, itdidn't feel strange or

unpleasant.

"U-um, well... I don't think I should be saying this now, but..."Just as we neared the entranceway to our dorms, Sakura opened her mouth.

"Actually... I... Right now..., never mind."

I didn't force her to complete the sentence. She got in the elevator and left.

As I entered my room, I messaged Manabu to arrange a meeting with the Director, tomorrow after the Sodou case is closed.

Then I started planning about the trap for the Class C students. Honestly they weren't that smart and if I just trick them into confessing everything. I might be able to save Sodou.

I called Ichinose to meet me at the lobby in an hour. After I freshened up and changed into my casual clothes. I left my room again.

Ichinose arrived exactly at the time we decided to meet.

"Yahoo! I'm really late, huh?"

"No, no. I just arrived early."

"So, what happened at the meeting. Did you guys win." she asked.

"Would you mind if we talk this over with a cup of coffee?" I asked.

"Ayanokouji-kun, are you asking me out on a date?" she said mischievously.

"What if I am? Would the Ichinose Honomi, the celebrity of first year would like to go on a date with me?"

She was flustered after hearing that. Two can play that game, Ichinose.

"I wouldn't mind. But I am not a celebrity Ayanokouji-kun. Don't

tease me." she said cutely.

We found a low-key cafe in the first floor below the ground of Keyaki mall. It wasn't that busy and was quite.

Ichinose ordered some waffles and Caffè Mocha while I ordered just a cup of black coffee. Ichinose tried hard to not judge me.

"So, what happened at the meeting?" she finally asked.

I repeated the story of the meeting like I had to Sakura.

"I see. So, you rejected the compromise, huh? Class D is insisting on Sudou's innocence until the very end?"

"Well, if Sudou even got as little as one day's suspension, Class C would win."

In other words, the compromise had been a trap. A sweet trap set to lure us to our defeat. She didn't seem convinced, though. She insisted that I had made the wrong decision.

"The fact remains that he hit the other students. Your opponents made a concession because of corroboration from the witness and her evidence. You should've accepted the compromise."

"But then just like you said, Sudou's suspension would be a loss for Class D. If Sudou were suspended due to his bad behavior, then his chances of being a team regular would probably vanish. He'd be back to square one." she countered her own statement.

"Or he might not just be sent back to square one. It might be worse, actually. If the school knew both sides shared the responsibility, they'd take that into account when assigning punishments. However, if Sudou's share of the blame increases tomorrow, it'll be bad news." it was like seeing two people arguing but it was just Ichinose.

Neither of those sides were wrong. But as an outsider seeing that there is no way to escape this predicament. She might be leaning more towards accepting the compromise.

"If you're brought back into a retrial, you'll inevitably lose. Obtaining a not-guilty verdict is virtually impossible. Are you still going to fight? Even without new evidence or testimony?" she looked at me.

"I made my decision and I will stick by it to the bitter end." I said while taking a sip of the coffee which had arrived during Ichinose's debate with herself.

"Well, then I'll do my absolute best to look for more evidence or another witness."

Even though she would have opted for compromise, her cooperation remained unwavering.

"You're still willing to help us?" I asked.

"We're in too deep now. Besides, it's like I said before. I can't forgive liars." she said.

She is a genuinely good person.

"I sincerely appreciate the offer, but it's not necessary."

"Not necessary? What do you mean, Ayanokouji-kun?"

"We cannot get Sudou acquitted. Even if a new witness were to come from Class A or B, it would be impossible. However...there is something I would like to request you to prepare for me. It is the only possible solution."

"Preparing something?"

"That's-" I then proceeded to explain to her what I wanted. The previously calm Ichinose's expression now stiffened.

"Oh... That's going to be a really hard request."

"I understand that I'm in no position to ask this." I said.

"Theburden I'd be placing upon you is exceptionally great. But-"

"Ah, no. Well, this should be within the range of what I can do, I think. That's because I plan to figure out what's happening to Class D. I've got tons and tons of things I want to know, but... Well, maybe it would be better for you not to tell us why?"

"You're certainly right about that. Well then, if I can convince you, will you cooperate with me?"

"You should understand the risks as well as the usefulness of this strategy," I said.

"When did you come up with this?" Ichinose asked.

"Just before the deliberation ended. Only by chance, though."

"That...an incredible move. I went to the scene of the crime and even I didn't think of that. Or, I guess I should say, I was completely in the dark about it. It wasn't even close to what I could imagine." Ichinose appeared to understand the plan and its intended effect. However, her expression was still distant, and she still seemed to be thinking.

"It might be contrary to your ethics and morals, Ichinose."

"Ha ha, yeah. You might be right. It's a change for me. But...it's certainly one way of doing things."

"Yeah. That's what I thought as well. It's something that never should have been done."

Would she lend me a hand? There were lies baked into this strategy. For someone like Ichinose, who hated lying, it was a harsh request.

"Well, since a lie started all this trouble, maybe it'll take another lie to close the books on this incident. That's what I think, anyway. But is that even possible, I wonder? I can't imagine such a thing would be easy to obtain."

"Don't worry about that part. I've confirmed it," I said.

"But I was just thinking, perhaps what we're doing right now might end up coming back to bite you in the ass later?"

"That could happen."

"Man. I completely neglected to calculate the fact that Class D has a leader like you." Ichinose, after complimenting me, took out her cell phone with a look of slight amazement.

"I'll lend this to you. Please return it later."

With that, she affirmed her willingness to help.

"Sure. I promise."

While we were talking, some girls from the first year recognized us and started pointing towards us with giggling faces.

"That's not good. I can already see the rumors circulating about us." I said.

"I guess this looks like a date especially be we are sitting at an isolated space." she said with worry on her face.

"Wait, this isn't a date? I am hurt Ichinose."

"Ayanokouji-kun!" Tomatonose was back.

With this I can finally say I am back.

My brain have started working again.

An important thing to note is that the title of the chapters is not some random words. They are taken from the terms used in a magic trick. It is related to the chapters.

I gave Sakura some attention because she wouldn't be just an NPC. She will have her character arc.

Please note that the bad English in Yamauchi pov is intentional. That's how he thinks in his mind.

I am excited for the next chapter.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-2 Ch-8 The Gaff

Reads: 1022 | Votes: 48 | Comments: 36

The summer sun hanging in the sky was dazzlingly hot. As I took each step along the tree-lined path to school, my body screamed in agony. Sweat poured down my face.

A cheerful student ran alongside and overtook me. She certainly looked lively. Alternatively, perhaps she was crazy? I probably wouldn't run even if I were being chased by the apocalypse.

I noticed a change as soon as I set foot inside the classroom. Sakura, who usually made it to school just in the nick of time, was already sitting at her desk. Had she come here early for any specific reason?

"Good morning, Ayanokouji-kun." she said.

"Good morning, Sakura. You look nervous, is something wrong?"

"It's because everyone's doing their best. I thought I'd do my best, too."

It felt like that she was saying that to herself, rather than to me.

"What are you thinking about?" I asked.

"Well, if there's something I need to move forward... I'll do it." she said.

"Hey, Sakura. Do you have any time later? I wanted to talk to you about something."

Sakura gently shook her head.

"I have plans today. Maybe tomorrow?"

I let the subject rest.

It was past 3:40. With classes over for the day, I went to the special building. This place had become increasingly hot and humid as the summer wore on.

If things proceeded as planned, then the person I was expecting should arrive soon. Shortly thereafter, three guys showed up, all grumbling about how unbearably hot it was. They appeared happy, though, wearing optimistic expressions.

That was because the three of them had received emails from the Class D sweetheart, Kushida.

"Do you think Kushida-chan was impressed by us, so she called us here to ask us out."

"Don't be delusional, she definitely wants to ask only me. But she was shy so she called both of you too."

They were probably dreaming about getting an invitation for a date, or even a romantic confession.

When they saw me, their fantasies were crushed.

"What's going on? Why are you here?"

Apparently they remembered me from the student council room. Ishizaki, the group's leader, stepped forward as if to intimidate me. He was rather forceful when no one was around to see.

"Kushida won't be here. I asked her to send an email to compel you all to come."

Ishizaki looked incredibly ill-tempered as he closed the distance between us.

"This isn't funny. What did you do this for, huh?"

"If I hadn't used an underhanded method, you would've just ignored me, right? I wanted to talk to you."

"Talk to us? Why would we want to do that? Has the heat scrambled your brain or something?"

Ishizaki, who clearly was affected by the heat, grabbed his shirt and flapped it.

"No matter what you do, you can't hide the truth. Sudou called us over here and beat us up. That's our answer. Now he needs to quietly accept his punishment."

"I have no intention of arguing. That would be a waste of time. I fully understand that neither Class C nor Class D will retract what they claimed yesterday."

"So why do this? Are you going to abduct us so we miss the trial? Or are you going to have a bunch of people surround us and threaten us with violence? It'll be just like that time with Sudou."

Oh. That was a rather interesting idea, but it would only work as a stopgap measure. Such threats wouldn't work against these people. Quite the contrary; they looked like they'd welcome it. If they were the victims of another attack, they'd probably find a way to make their situation even more favorable.

"Just give up. See ya later."

Understanding that Kushida would not be coming, the three turned and tried to leave, but one other person stood in their way.

"I think you guys might want to consider that idea, actually."

Ichinose, who'd been waiting for all of the players in this drama to appear, quietly stepped forward.

"I-Ichinose?! What are you doing here?!"

The Class C boys were shocked. Given the unexpected appearance of someone from Class B, their shock was reasonable.

"What do you mean? What if I said that I'm here because I'm involved in this case?"

"Ichinose, you're a celebrity."

"Ha ha. Well, I guess I'm well known among the members of Class C."

Since the Class C students hadn't expected her to be involved, it looked like tension was rising between them. They were clearly starting to lose their composure.

"This incident had nothing to do with Class B, right? So butt out..."

But unlike when they'd spoken to me, their threats sounded weak.They sounded desperate to get away.

"You're certainly right that Class B has nothing to do with this. But how do you feel about involving so many people in your lies?"

"We didn't lie. We're the victims. We are. Sudou called us out here and beat us up. That's the truth."

"So evildoers remain obstinate until the very end. It's about time for you to pay the piper!" Ichinose declared, making a wide-sweeping gesture with her right arm as she did so. Why is she talking like she is in some medieval drama?

"You lied. We can all see through you. You got violent in the end. If you don't want that fact to become public knowledge, withdraw your claim right away."

I sat down to enjoy the show Ichinose was putting up.

"Huh? Withdraw? Don't make me laugh. What, were you half asleep when you came up with that argument? You can't just claim something and make it true. Sudou started the fight. Right?"

Ishizaki looked to his two accomplices, who immediately answered.

"That's right! That's right!"

"Did you know that this school is one of the leading government sanctioned institutions in Japan?"

"Of course we do. That's why we tried to enroll here."

"In that case, you should try using your heads a bit more. Your aims were obvious right from the start, wouldn't you say?"

Ichinose grinned and talked with greater animation, as if relishing this. She walked slowly towards the three as she spoke, like she was a famous detective revealing the true culprit in an investigation. Now she is just changing the genre. But I wasn't complaining. If only I had some popcorn to enjoy this show.

"Didn't you think that the school's response to this incident was rather strange?"

"Huh?"

"When you raised the issue with the school, why wasn't Sudou punished immediately? Why give an opportunity to escape by granting a grace period of several days? What do you think was the reason?"

I never instructed Ichinose to say all of this, I only wanted to test, how good Ichinose was in coming up with a sound argument. But she is well above my expectations.

"Because he lied to the school and cried for mercy. If they hadn't given him the time as a formality, we, the victims, would have won."

"Is that really true? I wonder if you had a different aim, a different purpose."

The windows in the hallway were all closed. The sun, still high in the sky, glared down upon us, increasing the heat and humidity.

"I've got no idea what you're talking about. Ah, damn it. It's so hot!"

One's ability to think, that is to say, to concentrate, decreases as heat increases. One cannot exhibit sufficient logical, creative thinking outside of a comfortable environment. The more content you cram into your head, the more your brain will overload.

"Whatever, I'm out of here. I'm going to boil alive if I stay."

"Is that really okay, though? If you leave this place, you might regret it for the rest of your life."

"What do you want, Ichinose?"

They didn't seem to understand what she was getting at.

"Don't you understand? The school knows that you're lying, Class C.They've known from the beginning."

This statement probably came as a surprise to them. None of them had imagined such an outcome. Ishizaki and the others looked at each other for a few seconds, then snorted with laughter.

"Don't make me laugh. We lied? And the school knows it?"

"Ha ha ha ha. You guys are so funny," Ichinose said. "You've been dancing to my tune all this time." Ironically, I should have said that line.

"That's a nice try, Ichinose. But we're calling your bluff!"

"I have actual evidence," Ichinose continued, unfazed by Ishizaki's threats.

"Oh? Well, let's see it. Show me what evidence you-"

They thought there was no way we had any evidence, of course. Even after what Ichinose had said, they weren't shaking. However, when she began to speak, their defeat was decided.

"Did you know that there are security cameras installed everywhere around the school? It's a measure they've taken in order to monitor what we do every day."

"Yeah. So what?"

They seemed to have already known about the security cameras. Ishizaki and the others appeared unconcerned.

"Well, then. Did you not see that?"

Ichinose looked to a spot near the ceiling a little further down the hall. Ishizaki and the others tracked her gaze.

"Huh?"

They voiced complete disbelief. A security camera hung in the hallway and occasionally swung from left to right, capturing everything.

"That's too bad, isn't it? If you want to set a trap for someone, you'd need to do it in a place without any cameras."

"Buh, wh-what camera?! You're lying! But, there weren't any cameras in the other hallways, were there?! It's weird that there's only one installed here! Right?!"

Ishizaki looked back at his two accomplices, seeking their opinion.They nodded, confirming that yes, Ishizaki was right. They wiped sweat off their faces as they answered.

"You can't trick us like that. You guys installed that camera yourselves!"

"You're right that, by and large, cameras aren't installed in most of this building's hallways. However, there are exceptions, and several places in which security cameras have been installed, like in front of the faculty room and the science lab. Obviously, there are many valuables stored in the faculty room, you know? Additionally, the science lab has many chemical products. Since the science lab is on this level, it's only natural that a camera would be installed here."

For the first time, Ishizaki and the other seemed to be at a loss forwords. Ichinose did not fail to notice how they faltered.

"Have you looked back there, behind you? There's one there too, right?"Ishizaki and the others looked down the hall as instructed, and saw a camera. Of course, that camera was monitoring the hall's opposite end.

"So if we'd installed a camera, like you said, would we have prepare

done on that side, too? Besides, how exactly would we have prepared surveillance cameras when we can't even leave campus in the first place?"

She was cutting off their escape routes one by one.

"Th-that's impossible... That... I mean, we...checked back then... We should have..."

"This is the third floor, but did you really check? Maybe you only looked at the second or the fourth? Perhaps the cameras were truly set up here as a trap?"

The three were holding their heads and sweating far more than normal.

"Also, you realize that you just destroyed yourselves, right? Normal people wouldn't think to check whether there were security cameras, right? That's basically admitting your guilt." Ichinose delivered the finishing blow.

"So, so... That time... No way..."

"The security cameras couldn't record the sounds of your voices, but they definitely captured the decisive moment you threw the first punch."

There was a recorder in Ichinose's pocket which was recording this conversation. We only have to make them confess and we would be good to go.

The cuffs of their uniforms were completely drenched with sweat. Ichinose passed the baton to me. My my, they probably would've been better off just talking to me, huh?

"The school's waiting, right? Go ahead and tell us the truth. After giving you a grace period, the student council president himself asked if you had lied. If you think back, don't you realize that the student council saw through everything?"

The three of them were probably frantically wracking their brains to recall what happened at the meeting. Of course, the student

council had not seen through their lies at all. However, the student council had their doubts about who was telling the truth. If the Class C students interpreted that question to be focused squarely at them, it lent itself a certain credence.

Before I could continue to break them. We heard a weird laughing coming from the stairs.

"Kukuku, this little trick that you both tried to pull off, was very entertaining. But now it's time for it to end." said Ryūen.

"Were you hiding here all this time?" I asked.

"Oh yes, I wanted to see your plans unfold but unfortunate for you. I already know that these security cameras are fake. They were installed by you. So, that you could make them confess about something they didn't even do. It's a shameful act to trap the victims, how would the school feel about this?" Ryūen said.

He is still continuing the act. He knows that we are recording this. He knew about the cameras. How?

Ryūen was smart but he couldn't be this smart. For the first time in my life, I was outplayed. Have I finally met my match?

"That's right, Ayanokouji. Tell your master that however cunning he may be, he is no match for me."

Master? Wait a minute.

"Ishizaki, Kondou and Komiya. The meeting is going to start. Let's go and teach these Class D students, who is better." he said and left.

For a minute, I just stood there silently. Until, Ichinose broke me out from my reverie.

"Ayanokouji-kun, it's okay. Maybe, it is for the better that this plan didn't work. We all learned a lesson here. But it's almost time for the meeting to start. You should go." Ichinose tried to comfort me.

Maybe, today I will taste the defeat that I wanted for so long.

Flashback

(3 days before the final meeting)-

Ryūen POV-

"Ryūen-kun, Class D are searching for any witnesses." said Oda.

"Let them look, they won't find any. The location of the incident was so isolated, no one would have been there." I said.

"But like Ike and Yamauchi are being followed by some Class D students couldn't it be the same for Sodou?" he said skeptically.

"That is why, I set up the bait. Class D thought that they were the one on my radar. But I was throwing them off of thinking about Sodou."

"The only thing left is for you idiots to lie fluently in front of the President and there is no way for them to win."

While I was talking, I received a message from an unknown number.

"Class D, already have a witness."

That's all the message said.

What! There is no way.

"Who are you and why should I believe you?" I wrote.

"I am Fumei and you should believe me because I saw the witness myself."

"What do you mean, you saw the witness?"

"I am quite interested in the matters related to Class D, so when I came to know about you. I knew you would attack Class D."

"I saw through your entire plan and when your goons were intentionally

getting beaten up by Sodou, I was present there. I saw a Class D student run away from there after the fight."

Huh, he knows about my plan. He saw a Class D student, did Class D see through my trick?

"I assure you they didn't see through your little trick, that Class D student was present there by coincidence."

"But this could ruin my entire plan."

"It won't you just have to prove that the evidence was inconclusive. The witness is from Class D, so if my prediction is correct they would try to make a student from any other class the witness. They would just have the pictures as a proof. You could easily deny there claim."

"Why are you helping me? How does it benefit you? I know that in this world, nobody does anything beneficial for others just for charity."

"That is true, I am not doing this out of the goodness in my heart. I want to see the mastermind behind Class D on his knees."

"You mean there class leader, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka?"

"Oh no, I still don't know the name of the mastermind since all my life people have only called him the masterpiece. But I can assure you that this guy is an emotionless monster, not some goody two shoes like Ayanokouji."

"I am sure that the masterpiece is using this guy as a puppet to lead the class. Controlling from the shadows is his style, it would be too obvious for him to be out in the open."

Interesting, a shadow leader is in charge of Class D.

"You sound like you have a history with this guy."

"Oh yes. From the place I came here. He was the best there ever was. We were told everyday that a child two years younger than us is better than all of us combined. I will show them that they were wrong. I will defeat there masterpiece in the last year of my life in this school and go back to

that place to make them realize how wrong they were."

Jeez, this guy is too passionate about taking down a first year student.

"Don't worry I will defeat this masterpiece by myself."

"You can't, even in your dreams. But if you accept my help. Then you stand a chance. He is no ordinary delinquent like you were. He was trained to be the best."

Even though I don't like to work with anyone but I am not stupid enough to not accept voluntary help which would benefit me. Once this mastermind or masterpiece shit is done, I will discard this guy too.

"I will take your advice but if it turns out to be false then no matter whoever you are. I will find you and destroy you."

"Trust me what I said is true but as a backup plan turn the bait into a trap. Use Yajima as a honey trap to accuse Ike and Yamauchi of sexual assault."

"Do you think I will let one of the girl of my class be in contact with those creepy ass creatures."

"Why not? I happen to know that she had a rough past with these kind of experience. She will not hesitate to do anything to remain in this school. Moreover, with this move you can drive the mastermind into a corner."

How does he know about her past. Yajima was born as an orphan who was sold to some shitwarts who used her as a prostitute for satisfying old men. Thankfully, the police busted them and she was sent to an orphanage.

Even after all that shit, she turned out to be a bright student.

"You know quite a lot of things, how?"

"Let's just say that the masterpiece is not the only one who is good in computer programming."

*"What do you mean by that?"

"Now do as I say and I assure you that there would be no one who could dethrone you as the ruler of the school."

(1 day before the final meeting)-

"I have done as you said but it turns out that it wasn't even needed. Class D came up with a witness from third year. We were able to turn it in our favor with the help of our homeroom teacher, we have successfully postponed the decision to tomorrow. They don't have any cards to play." I messaged the Fumei.

"Good, but still report the harassment case to the school. We can't let him give any way of escaping. We should not just defeat him. We should crush him so bad that he will never get back up."

"Haha, you are my kind of guy. I would do the same. Gotta say you are impressing me more and more."

"But it's still not over yet, I predict he would try one final time. The only way left for him to save Sodou is by making your goons confess."

"Don't worry about that, they know better than that. If they ever think of betraying me then there is a lot of pain in there future."

"I am not talking about betrayal. Your followers are idiots, they could be easily tricked. I expect that the mastermind would try to put pressure on them to make them confess. Follow them until the meeting is over and victory is assured."

(Day of the final meeting)-

After Ishizaki, Kondou and Komiya had entered the meeting room. I messaged the Fumei.

"Are you some kind of seer. You predicted his move accurately. He used his puppet to trap Ishizaki and others. I prevented it from happening."

"Good, now let's see how the mastermind plays this situation. Rejoice Ryūen, your victory is all but assured."

Enter the biggest challenge for Ayanokouji in the first year.

The only thing I can tell about Fumei is that he/she is from the white room and is almost smarter than anybody in the school.

He refused to believe that Ayanokouji is the mastermind because the white room students are not taught about emotions or how to act in a normal environment.

This Kouji learned about it in the one year he was with Matsuo and in LN Yagami and Ichika were taught about it. But Fumei doesn't know that.

Comment on how you like this change.

The next chapter would be the final meeting. Will Ayanokouji be defeated? I don't know.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day.

Vol-2 Ch-9 The Final Stand Part-1

Reads: 1075 | Votes: 56 | Comments: 26

What the ancients called a clever fighter is one who not only wins, but excels in winning with ease.
-Sun Tzu

As I arrived at the student council office. I saw Chabashira-sensei waiting for me.

"Hey, everybody is inside?" I asked her.

She nodded with a grim expression. Considering the news she received yesterday, it was expected.

"Ayanokouji, I want you to know. Even if you don't win today. I will not disappointed in you. You have already made the class a lot better than I could have hoped. Even though we will be back to 0 points, maybe it is for the better." she said with a kind smile.

"I never thought you would be capable of saying such words. You should do it more often."

"There is no need to spoil this moment, Ayanokouji. I still haven't forgotten about you threatening me."

"Okay, but you should really have more faith in me. If there is one thing I am good at is winning." I said with a confident smile.

"Even after all this, you don't expect to lose?"

"Nah, I'd win."

I entered the meeting room. Kikyou was already sitting at her place.

Everyone looked at me. Class C students were smiling with confidence, a far cry from what situation they were in. After yesterday's scathing remarks of Nazuna being my girlfriend, Nagumo wasn't present.

I took my seat and opened the can of cold coffee. For a moment Class C students were confused, as to why I was so unbothered.

While I was sipping at my drink. Tachibana started the proceedings.

"First of all, why isn't Sodou present here?" asked Sakagami interrupting Tachibana.

"He is busy with his studies, he wouldn't be needed anyways." I said.

"Is that allowed President?" he looked at Manabu, who just nodded.

"The accused is free to do, whatever he wants. But he can't complain if the decision is against him."

Sakagami's face showed annoyance but he kept his mouth shut.

"The time limit allotted by the President has ended and still we haven't received any statement from either of these classes. If nobody has anything to say then the President will make his decisions." Tachibana

"I would like to appeal to the President, to consider the physical proof present here rather than some made up stories by Class D. If that's not all then I just got informed that these Class D students tried to trick my students to tell lies." Sakagami said with anger in his voice.

"Is it true? Ayanokouji." Manabu asked.

"I was just giving them a choice to come clean and I would spare them from punishment but they weren't smart enough."

"Enough with your lies. Do you think we should believe a class that harbors rapists.
President, for the inconvenience caused to my class, I would like

Sodou to be expelled. Not only that Ayanokouji Kiyotaka here, have wasted some important time of my students. I would like for him to be suspended as well." said the ugly troll. Yeah, that's what I would call this teacher.

"My, my. Someone is frustrated. Careful, or maybe you would be the one expelled here." I said with a glare that would chill his bones.

"We don't have time for this, I have more important things to do. President, if you may." he said with a shaky voice.

"I agree, I don't have time for this. So let's end it. I would like to present a video recording of the incident, that would prove that my classmate is innocent."

I got up from my seat and took out a USB drive. I plugged it in the computer present which was connected to the projector.

I looked at the Class C students and gave them a menacing grin. If there panic level while talking to Ichinose was 5, it was 10 now.

The curtains of the room closed automatically, creating a dark environment.

I played the video that would be the doom for Class C.

It showed three Class C students surrounding Sodou. The video was taken from a distance not too far, but not close either. But the sound quality was still good.

"If you don't quit the club, a lot of pain will be in your future." said Ishizaki.

"Do you think, I will be scared of you? Ha, don't make me laugh." said Sodou.

"You think you are some big shot, even kindergartners play better basketball than you." taunted Komiya.

"Yeah, you were just lucky to become a regular." said Kondou.

It was working. Sodou looked like he would hit them any second. But surprisingly he shook it off.

"Look, I am trying to improve myself. So, I don't want to fight you guys. Don't try to provoke me." he said.

The other three were surprised hearing this.

"Aw, look at that are little girl is a woman now. She doesn't even want to play with us."

"Grrr, I said knock it off. I am leaving." Sodou said and tried to leave.

But suddenly Ishizaki slapped him. That did it. Sodou suddenly turned and started hitting them one by one.

It was comical to be looking at from a third person perspective. Sodou was always focused on fighting one, while the other two would just stand there, waiting for there turn.

When Sodou would move to fight Kondou, Ishizaki and Komiya would just stand there.

After a while, all of the three lay on the floor, writhing in pain. Sodou's right fist was covered in blood.

"He he, so. Do you really think that this is the end of it, Sudou?"

Despite being barely able to move, Ishizaki tried to taunt.

"Do you wanna make me laugh? You're in the sorriest state possible. You want to go for another round, huh? Next time I won't hold back."

Sudou grabbed Ishizaki's collar, and brought him closer. They were eye-to-eye now, only a few centimeters apart. Sudou looked as though he was going to kill and then devour his opponent, which was so overwhelming that the defeated Ishizaki looked away.

"Are you scared? Did you really think you'd beat me if you had more people?"

Sudou snorted, dropped the student, picked up his bag, and then

turned and walked away as if the defeated three completely disinterested him.

"What a waste of time. Tiring me out after practice. Give me a break," Sudou said.

"You're the one who's going to regret this later, Sudou."

The Ishizaki's words stopped Sudou in his tracks.

"Nothing's more pathetic than a sore loser. No matter how many times you come at me, you won't win."

The video ended. The curtains moved back to their place letting the sunlight in.

"This video not only proves that Class C provoked Sodou and attacked first, but they didn't even try to defend themselves. Anyone with an ounce of brain would figure out that this was a trap set by Class C, to sabotage us. I rest my case, your honor." I ended like those lawyers from the shows that Karuizawa made me watch.

I took my seat and winked at Sae. Whose mouth was open in shock. I guess she never expected that. Even Kikyou was shocked, as she was not involved in this part of the plan.

"By the latest evidence we have gotten, it seems that Class D was telling the truth whereas Class C was trying to fool an esteemed institution. As I said yesterday, expulsion is on the table."

"Due to lying to the school to sabotage Class D and attempting to ruin the career of a talented basketball player. I hereby state that Ishizaki Daichi, Komiya Kyougo and Kondou Reo are expelled from The Tokyo Metropolitan Advanced Nurturing Highschool." Manabu declared.

"No!! Please, don't do that. Yes we lied. We are very sorry." cried Kondou.

"Yes, please. Give us another chance. We promise we would never do something like this again." Komiya followed.

But the best view was Sakagami's face. He looked like he had swallowed a rat.

"I guess after you offered us a compromise yesterday. It would be rude of me to not offer a deal." I said.

"What is it? We agree. Just don't let us get expelled."

"Kondou, I will ask you two questions. If you answer that, I promise your expulsion would be nullified. Can I do that, President?"

"Yes, as the affected party. You do have the right to decide their punishment. I cannot object to that."

At this Kondou perked up.

"Hey, what about us?" asked Komiya.

"Don't worry Komiya, if Kondou doesn't answer the questions. You would get the chance as well. I will only save those who answers me."

"I will answer all of your questions, please ask anything." begged Kondou.

"President, would you mind being a witness to this confession?"

"No, there is no problem. This meeting is getting recorded as well for the record."

"First question, was Ryūen behind all of this. Was it his plan?" I asked.

Kondou started sweating buckets. He was stuck between a rock and a hard place. If he doesn't answer, he would get expelled but if he did. Ryūen wouldn't just let him go, in fact I can already foresee his injuries.

"Kondou, if you don't answer someone else will. It's your choice do you fear expulsion at 4:20 pm or fear about facing Ryūen at some time in the future because if you choose wrong then you would no longer be a student in this school at 4:21 pm. I will count till 5." I

said with conviction.

"Okay, okay. I will answer. J-just don't expel me." he took a deep breath.

"Yes, Ryūen-kun was the one who planned this and told us to intentionally get beaten by Sodou." he said in a low voice as if he was afraid that Ryūen would hear him.

"See, that wasn't so hard. So, it is proved that Ryūen is also responsible for this situation. Now for my second question, there is a difference between the injuries done by Sodou and the injuries you have. Did someone hit you?"

"Y-Yes, Ryūen-kun ordered Albert to hit us, so that our injuries are more severe."

"So, this Albert guy is involved too."

With each name, Sakagami's face fell even more. I was literally taking out there entire class. But I was just getting started.

"Thank you for your cooperation, Kondou. As promised, I would request President to reduce his punishment from getting expelled to just being suspended for a week."

Manabu just nodded.

"Now, Komiya. Would like a chance to redeem yourself too?"

"Yes! Please."

"Good, then answer this. Did Sakagami-sensei knew that you were lying? I want the truth. If you lie, then you aren't getting saved."

"What? This is ridiculous. He can't just ask that. He would expel Komiya if he doesn't say yes." said Sakagami.

"Why are you getting so worked up? Perhaps, you don't want the truth to be revealed." I said.

"It's no-"

"Why don't you keep your mouth shut and let the students talk Sakagami." said Sae.

"Yes, he knew about all of this. He knew that we were lying." Komiya finally answered.

"So, does that mean. Yesterday, he clearly lied to the council and tried to protect his own students?"

"Y-yes, he did."

I got you cornered, you ugly troll.

"Sae-sensei, I don't know much about the school rules but what does it say about a teacher intentionally helps in protecting an offender from his class."

"A teacher is prohibited from showing favoritism to his class. They should be impartial, if they don't. They are terminated from their post and their class is fined."

I said nothing and just smiled at Sakagami.

"President, Komiya's punishment shall be the same as Kondou."

Both of the said individuals sighed a breath of relief.

"Well, then if this matter is settled. Can we move on to the more important one."

"Wait a minute, what about me?" asked Ishizaki.

"What about you?" I said with a confused expression.

"You didn't ask me any questions?"

"I have no use for you, so your punishment is the same one that President said. Expulsion."

"What! You can't do that. Why did you save them and not me?"

"Enough, your case is done. You all can leave. Now, we will be discussing about the sexual harassment allegations against Ike and

Yamauchi." said Manabu.

Komiya and Kondou left immediately. Ishizaki was reluctant but he too left. Sakagami remained seated with an expression that showed he had lost all hopes.

There was a reason I had let Komiya and Kondou free. They were insignificant figures in their class. In exchange, I got the big fishes under my radar. Ryūen is already proved to be involved in this, Ishizaki is handed expulsion. Albert is also in the list. But I got their teacher fired.

All of this will leave Class C in shambles. I can ask them to do anything I want and they would have to do it.

That's what you get if you try to challenge me.

Soon, a man with white hair who looked to be in his 40s entered the room. Both the teachers and Manabu stood up. Others followed them.

Manabu greeted him formally and gave up his chair. The chairman sat down in his seat.

Both him and Tachibana sat down on the sofa present at the corner of the room.

The chairman looked at me and his expression changed.

"Ah, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka. I am surprised to see you here. I am Sakayanagi Narumori."

"Good evening sir, but do I know you?"

"You haven't met me before but I have seen you at that place. Although, rest assured. I am not on his side. I can't elaborate more right now, hopefully you would have some time to meet me in the future."

"Of course, I would be happy to clear some of my doubts about my admission."

No-one had any idea about what we were talking.

"Although, what did you meant by surprised seeing me here?"

"I never thought you would become and class representative."

I understood what he meant, anyone who knew about my past would assume that I would never want to stand out.

Which is true, but here I have to lead the class so that I can escape this country. Once I am in a place where no one could find me. I would try to live like an average guy.

It was time for the scheduled meeting about the harassment allegations to start. Ryūen alongside Yajima, Ibuki and Ishizaki entered the room.

Looks like I finally drove the rat out in the open. He glared at me like I had killed his grandma. Definitely the news of the last meeting reached him.

I gave him a smile in return. Let's have a good one on one here, Ryūen.

At first I was going to write this as one single chapter but it was becoming too big, so I made it a double parter.

Volume two is going to end soon. I have some short stories planned. After that Volume 3 will start.

But I am thinking of taking a break of a week before volume 3. The island arc is the first special exam. So it should be good.

Although I have a rough idea of what I am going to do, I still want it to be perfect. That's something hurt this volume. I wrote it without a break, so I couldn't write the best of my potential.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-2 Ch-10 The Final Stand Part-2

Reads: 1138 | Votes: 59 | Comments: 19

Thus it is that in war the victorious strategist only seeks battle after the victory has been won, whereas he who is destined to defeat first fights and afterwards looks for victory.
-Sun Tzu

"If everyone is present, let us begin." Tachibana said.

"Before this discussion begin, I would like to bring this to everyone's notice that school doesn't take these types of topic lightly. If Class D here, knowingly trying to protect the felons then the punishment would be severe. The whole of Class D would be suspended for a month." Chairman Sakayanagi looked at me.

"I agree to the terms and conditions. Let's begin." I said with confidence.

This pissed off Ryūen even more than he already was.

"A report was filled by Class C accusing Ike Kanji and Yamauchi Haruki of Class D, sexually harassing Yajima Mariko of Class C. I would like to confirm with Class C that this statement is true." said Tachibana.

"Yes, it's hundred percent true. Those two bastards laid there creepy hands on Yajima. Thankfully, Okabe alerted us and we reached in time to stop anything from happening." Ryūen said passionately. Yep, the loss hurt him pretty bad.

"Class D, what would you like to say in Ike and Yamauchi's defense?"

"I would like to ask if I can play the clips from last meeting." I answered.

"What would that prove? This is a separate case." said Ryūen.

I didn't pay him any mind. Manabu played the recording in which Kondou confessed about Ryūen.

"Now keeping it in mind, that Class C already created a lie to sabotage Class D. What are the chances that this situation is any different?"

"That was about a measly fight, this one is serious. Why would we lie about this? Can you be a little considerate. Yajima went through all that trauma and you are claiming it to be a lie?" he shouted.

"Yes."

"Oh yeah, last meeting you showed a recording right? How about I show one of those too." he said and got up.

He did the same procedures as me and played a video recording on the projector. For the second time, the curtains did their job.

The video was taken from a far. Unlike my video, the sound was not recorded at all.

It showed Ike and Yamauchi touching Yajima at inappropriate places. Suddenly, Yajima started shouting for help.

At that moment the cameraman along with some others started running towards her. Albert tackled both of them to the ground.

"Hey, what are you doing? Don't interrupt our good times." Yamauchi cried.

"Ryūen-kun, these are the boys who called us here to rape us. Thankfully, we reached in time to save Yajima-san. Or else who knows what they could have done to her." said Okabe.

I looked at Yajima who wasn't looking at the screen, she was holding her face between her hands and silently sobbing. She was

playing her part very well. Kikyou, you have a twin.

"Good work Okabe for telling us about it. You both trash, I will destroy you both." said Ryūen in the recording.

"Why, we did nothing wrong. She is the one who told us to do whatever we want with her." Yamauchi cried.

That idiot still haven't realized what was happening to him.

"He is lying, they started touching me forcefully and said that if I didn't let them have me. Then they would destroy my life." Yajima started crying in the recording as well as in the present.

'What! No you are lying." Ike shouted.

"That's enough. Ibuki, do you have the video?"

That's where the video ended. The curtains opened again. This time a beautiful sunset could be seen from the window.

"That certainly proves Class C's claims. If Class D doesn't have anything to say then I would give my decision." said Chairman Sakayanagi.

"Oh, I certainly have something to say. Or rather Class C themselves have something to say." I took out my USB drive again.

Repeated the process, the damn curtains moved again. I swear they become irritating after a while.

"This one is an audio recording, I think it would be a welcome change from all the video recordings." I tried to crack a joke but nobody laughed. Tough crowd.

The recording started playing.

"Hey, Yajima-chan. I guess you are excited to go on a date with me, hug?" came Yamauchi's voice.

"Yes, Yamauchi-kun. I am very excited." Yakima said.

"Yajima-chan when will Okabe-chan be here, she is late." Ike said.

"Don't worry Ike-kun. She isn't here, but I am. I will satisfy all your needs. Both of you, I am yours."

That's check and mate! I smirked at Ryūen. Who looked like he had seen a ghost.

"Y-Yajima-chan, what are you saying?" asked a nervous Ike.

"I said what you heard. I will do anything you want, even the naughty stuff. Just tell me to. I am yours, take me Ike-kun and Yamauchi-kun." the girl whispered.

There were some noises but then.

"Help! Somebody help! Please, save me." she cried.

"Hey, what are you doing? Don't interrupt our good times." Yamauchi cried.

"Ryūen-kun, these are the boys who called us here to rape us. Thankfully, we reached in time to save Yajima-san. Or else who knows what they could have done to her." said Okabe.

"Good work Okabe for telling us about it. You both trash, I will destroy you both." said Ryūen.

"Why, we did nothing wrong. She is the one who told us to do whatever we want with her." Yamauchi explained.

"He is lying, they started touching me forcefully and said that if I didn't let them have me. Then they would destroy my life." Yajima started crying.

'What! No you are lying." Ike shouted.

"That's enough. Ibuki, do you have the video?"

"Yes, I have it." replied Ibuki.

This was the part where the video had ended but the audio

recording kept going.

"You okay there, Yajima? I don't think this would have been a pleasant experience for you." said Ryūen.

"I have had worse with those older guys. So this was nothing."

"What is happening here, can anybody please tell us?" Yamauchi said.

"I amazed by how dumb you both are, Albert beat them up in a manner that even there mother wouldn't recognize them."

"What! No, we will complain to the school about this." Ike said.

What followed was a string of grunts and groans with the sound of flesh hitting flesh. Not going to lie, without any video, it sounded like something else.

After some time Albert's voice came.

"They have fainted, boss."

"Good, check their pockets for any recorders. Ibuki take their phones and see if it is recording anything."

"There is no recordings, all clear."

"Good, Yajima you know what to do next, right? Act well. We will go and fill a complaint. Others do one more check of the surrounding, if you find anyone. You know what to do." Ryūen ordered.

I stopped the recording and looked at the chairman.

"As you can see, Class C did it again. They set up a trap to sabotage my classmates. The first one was still relatively smaller. It would have destroyed Sodou's basketball carrier. But this one could have destroyed two innocent lives." I said.

"Class C, what do you have to say?" asked Tachibana.

"I just have one question, how?" Ryūen asked while glaring at me.

"A good magician never reveals his tricks, accept it Ryūen. You

lost."

"The school doesn't condones this type of behavior. Competition is good until it's healthy. What you just did could be considered a heinous act. Because of cases like this in future, people will stop believing in the real victims. Whose life is destroyed because of such acts." said Chairman Sakayanagi to Class C students.

"Now, I want compensation for my class. We have been living without any points since the start of the month. The level of inconvenience caused due to these unhinged people is insane. Not only it morally affected our class but it also affected our preparation for the final examination. I want it repayed." I demanded.

"I want them expelled."

All of the Class C members had wide eyes. They instantly looked at the Chairman, who was in deep thought.

"If Ike Kanji or Yamauchi Haruki were found guilty, they would have been expelled and sent to prison. It is only fair that the people who made false allegations should face at least expulsion for attempting to ruin their life." Chairman Sakayanagi stated.

Something broke inside Ryūen. He got up and almost rushed at me. But then he started laughing.

"Oh, your master trained you well. Looks like he is as good as they said."

"Ryūen, you shouldn't be the one to talk. Didn't you help from someone too. I know that you have a benefactor helping you out."

At this his smile vanished.

"Oh, you and your mastermind will be fun to play with. I may have lost today. But next time, I will crush you."

"Ryūen, please refrain from using such language at an official meeting." warned Tachibana.

"But Ryūen, why are you talking like there would be a next time?

You are going to get expelled aren't you?"

"Oh, I know what you are going to ask. So there is no need to pretend."

"That is true. Chairman Sakayanagi, I think it would be too extreme to expel them without giving them a chance to save themselves."

Chairman Sakayanagi looked at me with interest.

"I am offering Class C a deal, transfer 400 class points and all the private points currently in the account of Class C students to Class D. In return, no one will be expelled."

"You mad bastard, why do you think we should give you all of our points. Nobody in the class would agree to it. You are joking?" said Ibuki.

"If you don't, then you, Ishizaki, Yajima, Okabe, Albert and Ryūen. All of you will be expelled. For each expulsion, the class loses 100 class points. So you will go back to 0 anyways. I am still letting you keep 175 class points. Consider it my generosity." I explained.

Hearing this Yajima started crying, this time for real. She got up from her seat and ran towards me. I thought she was going to attack me, instead she hugged me tightly.

"Please, Please don't expel. I don't want to go back to that place. I don't want to lose my only chance at a better life. You don't know what I had to go through in my past but please understand." she started sobbing in my chest.

Okay, I am convinced that there is some quality in me, which always makes the girls cry around me.

"Look, it's not up to me. I already gave your class the offer. If they accept it, you will not be expelled. That's the best I can do, considering you tried to ruin someone else life." I whispered to her, gently removing her from myself.

"I accept." Ryūen said with a stone face.

"Good, then it's a deal. Please don't forget to transfer all the points because I would check with the school. If you didn't then the deal would be nullified."

"You will receive it."

"Sir, when will we get our private points. My classmates had to suffer much. But now I think the school should credit the updated amount."

Receiving 400 CP from Class C would bring our total to 495 CP. Which would mean we will be getting 49,500 private points.

Sae looked at me like I am a God. Considering that this is the first time a Class D, advanced into Class C. That too in just two months after reaching zero points, I may as well be one for her.

But I wasn't done. Not yet.

"Now that Chairman Sakayanagi is here, why don't we discuss about the Sakagami-sensei matter."

Sakagami who was sitting silently till now, looked at me with fear in his eyes.

"President could you please brief the Chairman about it."

While Manabu was explaining what happened to the Chairman, Tachibana and I wrote the contract which stated our deal and its conditions.

Ryūen and I signed it. A copy was given to Ryūen, another one to me and the last one was submitted to the school.

"Coming back to the topic, I hope you came to know about Sakagami-sensei's deeds."

"Yes. Sakagami, I am really disappointed that you would break the rules as a teacher. Did you know about this case too?"

"No, no. Sir, I didn't know anything about this case. I only knew about the Sodou case."

"After all this, I can't trust if you are telling the truth or not. As a result of your transgressions, you are no more a faculty at this institution."

Sakagami accepted his fate silently.

"If that's all then, I will be going. Sakagami meet me in my office to finalize your dismissal." Chairman Sakayanagi left the room along with Sakagami. Sae gave me a last look and left.

"You will suffer for this, tell your master that he won't see me coming next time. I will attack when you least expect it, I will attack until he and his class is defeated. Tell him that he has made a lifelong enemy of me." Ryūen said.

"Then know this Ryūen, if you come after my friends. Then I will show you no mercy."

Hopefully he will believe what I said. He gave me one last glare and left.

The Class C students followed suit. Soon the only one left in the room was Kikyou, Manabu, Tachibana and me.

"Ayanokouji, I am inviting you for tea in my office. You can't deny, let's go." said Manabu.

I didn't even get the chance to protest.

We entered the President's office. Manabu sat in his chair. Kikyou and I sat in the sofa. Tachibana was boiling water for the tea in an electric kettle.

"So, how did you do it?"

"A good ma-"

"I don't care, how did you do it?"

Someone is eager to know. Kikyou too, wanted to know about the video recording of Sodou fight.

"Well, it all started in the month of May. Kikyou, do you remember that incident during lunch when we met Nazuna and Fūka for the first time?"

"Yes, Ryūen and his lackies had surrounded Sodou." Kikyou replied.

"Exactly, at that moment. Ryūen said he got what he wanted before leaving. At that time I didn't know what he was talking about. But then for the month of June, Class B lost a lot of points."

"I asked Amikura Mako, from Class B about it. She told me that it was due to Class C's shenanigans. Class C students would strategically attack their weak students in a way that they wouldn't be blamed. At that moment it clicked. Ryūen was scouting for Class D's weakness and he found it in Sodou."

"You deducted all of that from one sentence that Ryūen said?" asked Manabu.

"Get used to it, I have." said Kikyou.

"Yes, I did. So, I instructed Chiaki to follow Sodou at all times. For almost a month nothing happened. But Class C made contact. But in a different way than I thought. Class C girls started getting friendly with Ike and Yamauchi. Now if it had been anybody else, I would have written it off. But that move was too suspicious."

"From the information, I have about Ryūen. It was an obvious trap, not something

Ryūen would do. It was simply a bait."

"But it wasn't right? They did trap Ike and Yamauchi." Manabu said.

Tachibana served us some tea. She sat down on the chair beside Manabu.

"It was a bait, but when Ryūen came to know that I had a witness, he wanted to double trap me. So as a backup he executed that plan." I explained.

"But if you knew it was a bait, then why did you tell Sotomura and

Okitani to follow them." Kikyou asked.

"All warfare is based on deception. Ryūen set up the bait to cover his real plans. So I did the same. Sotomura and Okitani are very bad in following someone. Anyone other than Ike and Yamauchi would have known that they were being followed."

"So, obviously Ryūen would notice it too. When he saw that I had Ike and Yamauchi followed. It gave Chiaki, who is a lot better in this field, a cover. He didn't expect anyone to follow Sodou."

"So, Matsushita-san recorded the whole fight without anybody noticing. Although, I still have a question. The distance from which the video was taken. The conversation between Sodou and the Class C students couldn't be recorded. How did that happen?" asked Tachibana for the first time.

"That's because Chiaki wasn't recording with an ordinary device. I had modified it for better sound capture."

"You know how to do that?" she asked.

"I have learned university level engineering, so yeah." I said like it was normal.

Manabu looked at me impressed, whereas Tachibana was in shock.

"How did you record the Ike and Yamauchi incident? In the recording, it was said that there was no recorders or anything."

"That was a bug recorder. Another device created by me. The school doesn't sell such things, I tried searching for it."

"Kikyou here planted it on them before they went to meet the Class C girls. Then later she removed it before they were taken captive."

Even though Kikyou couldn't swear in front of Manabu and Tachibana, I knew she was cursing me in her mind. Although, I would have done worse in her place. I mean hugging Ike and Yamauchi, not once but twice. That's the most repulsive thing, I could think of.

She should be rewarded for her contributions.

"And what about Kiryuin as your witness, was she really a witness?"

"Who knows?" I denied him.

"Wait a minute, so all of this time you knew that you were going to win. Even the day when you came here for the first time." asked Tachibana.

"I had won before Ryūen even formed his plan properly. It was just the experience that mattered."

"Then why did you set up that whole calling them to the special building, involving Ichinose. Wasn't it just a waste of time?" Kikyou asked.

"I never do anything without reason. It had a purpose that I won't explain now."

"But if you knew everything and could have saved your classmates directly, why did you let them suffer?" asked Tachibana.

"Learning from mistakes is the best way of learning, it can't be denied that they did make mistakes. So, I waited long enough for them to realize their mistakes and learn from it. At this very moment Ike and Yamauchi are contemplating their life choices in their holding cell. Hopefully, in the future they will correct their mistakes." I explained.

"But isn't it wrong to make them feel as their life is ruined. It could cause some serious trauma." she countered.

"I don't think so. If I wasn't here, there life would be over. There would have been no-one to save them. At least I am saving them. Moreover, I don't want my class to think of me as a get out of jail free card. They will make the mess and leave it up to me for cleaning it."

"Anyways, you have exceeded my expectations Ayanokouji. As agreed your application for the student council has been approved. Welcome, the first member of the student council amongst first

years." Manabu declared stopping Tachibana to speak any further.

"He rejected many applicants for you. Ichinose from Class B, Katsuragi from Class A and Kaneda from Class C, all of them were rejected." said Tachibana.

"I am honored. So what's my position?"

"You will be holding the position of Treasurer. Previously, a student from third year was the Treasurer, but he resigned to focus on his studies. It's an important position to be given to a first year student."

"Don't worry, I am good in economics too. Although, will I be getting paid?"

"25,000 points per month. It's the third highest salary after President and Vice-president who gets 100,000 and 50,000 respectively."

"I can continue with my book club, right? It's not mandatory to be present but I quite like it."

"Yes, you can. But don't miss the timings. Everyday at least two hours. It's on you to decide if you want to work in the morning or after school, or both. Other than that you have to present in all of the meetings."

"Got it."

"Then you can leave. Have a good day."

Kikyou and I left the office.

But before I could relax, another problem presented itself.

Next chapter would probably be the last chapter of volume 2. After that some short stories.

Write now I have planned for 3 SS.

So, Ayanokouji is a member of student council. Class C is destroyed and is now Class D.

Tell me how you felt about this arc.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-2 Ch-11 The Aftermath

Reads: 1299 | Votes: 58 | Comments: 29

"Ayanokouji-kun, Help!"

That's the first words I heard as I picked up the call incoming from Sakura.

Before I could say anything, the call ended.

I instantly opened the tracking application and located Sakura.

"Kikyou, open the tracker app, search for Sakura. Go to the security office and bring some security officers to the location." I instructed Kikyou and instantly ran off.

As I exited the club building, I ran into Ichinose. She looked like she was waiting for someone. On seeing me she tried to ask some question but before she could speak.

"Ayanokouji-kun, how-"

"Ichinose, climb on my back. I will explain when we reach the location. Fast, we don't have time." I interrupted her.

At first she was hesitant but after seeing my serious expression she held on to my back.

I took off, running at speeds which could match professional Olympic athletes.

It was evening, so most of the students were roaming the campus. All of them gave us a look. I guess running at insane speed while giving a girl piggyback ride wasn't common.

Soon, we reached the Keyaki mall. I let Ichinose down on the ground. She looked like she had survived a hurricane. Her hair was

a mess and she looked at me with shock.

"One of my classmates is in danger, this is her location. We need to save her." I explained the gist of the situation.

We followed the point showing Sakura's location. It was a dark alleyway. I instructed Ichinose to start recording.

As we neared the location, we could hear muffled voices. On observing closely, I could figure out two shapes. One of them was lying on the ground and the other one was holding it down.

Seeing what was happening, Ichinose gasped.

“Why would you say something like that? You’re my treasure… Ever since I first saw you in a magazine, I’ve loved you. Meeting you again here, I felt like it was destiny. I love you… I can’t stop feeling this way about you! I’ll show you just how much I love you now… If I do that, then you’ll understand, Sakura.”

“No, let me go!”

It was the creepy clerk from the electronic store. He looked as hideous as ever.

"Hey! I’m no proctologist, but I know an asshole when I see one. Now get off of her." I started walking towards him.

On seeing me, he panicked. He stood up and brandished a knife from his pocket.

Sakura looked at me with shock and gratitude.

"Don't come any closer. If you come closer I will kill you. Leave me alone with my Shizuku." he started swinging wildly. His hand was shaking.

I didn't stop, I kept moving forward slowly until I was at his arms length. I was at an angle from where the camera recording would have a clear view.

Suddenly, he dashed forward. Like a madman he tried to stab me

with the knife.

"Ayanokouji-kun!" Ichinose and Sakura cried.

I was waiting for this moment. Now, he gave me the reason of self defense.

I dodged quickly and caught his wrist holding the knife, locking it in a strong grip. Then I forced him into an angle where my body was blocking the camera's vision. Then before he could even think of using his second hand.

I jabbed his nose with my pointed elbow. Not Once or twice but five times. I couldn't use my full strength in front of others or else one would have been enough to make him unconscious.

The jabs at quick intervals, caught him off-guard. When I was done, his nose was unrecognizable. He had tears in his eyes and blood was dripping from his broken nose. He fell into the ground and started wailing.

I may have not use my full strength but I certainly didn't held back in inflicting pain. I took the knife from him and kept it in my pocket.

Turning around to look at Ichinose's shocked face. I gave her a sign to attend to Sakura.

She understood and approached Sakura. Who was still overwhelmed by what happened.

Soon, Kikyou arrived with the guards. After getting briefed about the whole incident, they took creepy clerk guy with them.

They informed us to visit their office later to fill up some details and give witness testimonies. Ichinose had successfully calmed Sakura. She was now standing on her feet.

But before leaving the creepy clerk started yapping.

"No! No! This is a misunderstanding. She loves me. You don't know but she sends me her pictures. She wants to marry me. Please."

"Shut up!" Sakura had enough of his delusions.

"I don't even like you. You are delusional. Stop sending me letters and messages. Just leave me alone!"

"What? B-but, I thought you loved me. You liar! You bitch, how could you do that to me. Oh, I get it. Sluts like you are no-one's right? You liked to get fu-"

Before he could continue anymore Sakura slapped him. It really looked like she had put everything she had in that slap.

"You are a creepy perverted old man. You have no right to call me that." she looked like she would murder him.

Before she could do anything, I held her back.

"Sakura, don't waste your time on a scumbag like him. Officers, please can you take this guy away."

After they left the scene, I looked at Sakura.

"Are you okay, Sakura?" I asked.

Suddenly, she hugged me. It was certainly not a gentle one.

"Yes. Thank you Ayanokouji-kun for saving me. For a moment, I thought you wouldn't come. I felt alone, helpless." she started crying for the third time.

Both Ichinose and Kikyou looked awkward and tried to look away.

"Hey, it's my duty as your friend. I am just glad that I wasn't late. But you should really inform me before hand, if you want to do something insane."I patted her head.

"I thought maybe, I can do it alone. To face him was my first step to become someone better. But now, I realize how foolish I was."

"Hey, neither are you foolish nor helpless. You just need to keep in mind that you have friends who will help you. You could have called me or Chiaki or Kikyou before facing that guy."

"I am sorry, I will remember that for the next time." she gave me a small smile.

Sakura finally realized what she was doing and backed off. Her face was red as a tomato.

"Sakura-san, I don't understand. How did you end up in this situation?" asked Ichinose.

"I-Uh, I actually-"

"Sakura, don't worry. You can tell her. Your secret will be safe." I assured her.

"So, I am actually a gravure idol. That guy there was one of my fans. Even though I do have many fans who are older than me. They still respect my privacy. But this guy was insane and creepy. He used to send me creepy messages of how he loved me, he missed me and wanted to spend his life with me."

"But it really escalated when I came to this school. I don't know if it was my bad luck but he found out that I attended this school. Soon, he started sending me letters to my room, he wrote about how he saw me and send my pictures taken by him. I felt unsafe."

"So, today I tried to confront him. To ask him to stop bothering me but he overpowered me and brought me to this alley from the back exit. Thankfully, I had managed to call Ayanokouji-kun." Sakura explained her story to Ichinose.

After Ichinose heard the whole story, she looked at Sakura with respect.

"You are brave, Sakura-san. To confront your fears like that. Although, I would agree with Ayanokouji-kun. You should had someone accompanying you." Ichinose said.

"Thank you for the praise but it was due to Ayanokouji-kun, I was able to leave my shell. He inspired me to become someone better for myself and I will." she said proudly.

"Well, it's already late. I think we should go back to our dorms."

We walked back to the first year dormitories.

"Ayanokouji-kun, I forgot to ask what happened in the meeting?" asked Ichinose.

"Was that the reason you were waiting for me outside the club building?"

"Yes, I wanted to know the results. Our plan failed and you were distraught. So, is Sudou-kun suspended?"

"Oh, no. We won the case. Sodou is perfectly safe. Actually, we are Class C now."

"Wait, what? How did that happen?"

"Although, it is confidential and I am not allowed to reveal anything. Somehow, Class C admitted to their wrongdoings."

"I still don't understand. But I am really happy to hear that. Congratulations, you guys are Class C now. I mean that's awesome." Ichinose was genuinely happy for us.

After a while, we reached the dormitory building.

Ichinose was the first one to return, while Sakura, Kikyou and I sat down in the lobby to drink some coffee from the vending machine.

"I think I will have nightmares about what happened today." Sakura said in a low voice.

"Hey, if you don't want to be alone. You can sleep in Kikyou's room. She won't mind."

Kikyou gave me a look that said she did mind.

"No, I don't want to be a bother for Kushida-san. I will adjust. It is not that bad." she said.

"Sakura, if you need any kind of help, just give me a call. Okay?"

"I will Ayanokouji-kun, once again thank you. Now, I should go. I

have to study for the finals. I will work hard and won't lack in studies anymore." she said with determination.

She said her goodbyes and left. Kikyou followed suit.

I had one last meeting for the day.

I reached my favorite spot by the sea. She was sitting on the bench waiting for me.

"So, what did you want to talk about?"

"Good evening, Ayanokouji-kun. It's always pleasant talking with you." she greeted me.

"Good evening to you, Sakayanagi. I met your dad today."

"Should I even ask about how did the meeting go. Knowing you, I would guess that not only did you win. But you crushed your opponent."

"You would be correct. You are looking at the representative of Class C now."

"Oh, that means you are one more step closer to fighting me. I can't wait for that day."

"I didn't know you were this excited to get defeated. Is this some kind of fetish?"

"Will you ever take me seriously?" she gave me a glare.

I just shrugged and patted her head. Which always seems to fluster her. She swatted my hands.

"Ayanokouji-kun, I wanted to meet you today for making a deal."

"A deal? I am listening."

As she explained about the entailments of the deal. I was more and more impressed by her.

Not only she saw through one of my long term plans. She also

found a way to help me in return for helping her.

However, small she looked physically. She might turn out to be a formidable opponent but I was already planning to make her an even stronger ally.

Having her by my side would help me in long term. But that's still a long way to go. I finally returned to my room after an eventful day. Already, simulating what tomorrow might hold.

After all, there is no rest for the wicked.

Karuizawa POV-

I met up with my friends at the lobby before we started walking towards school. The sun was beaming down on us.

"It sucks that now we have to live without any points for another month." said Mori-san.

"Yeah, all because of those stupid idiots. At least they are gone now." Nishimura-san said.

"I will never forget them for ruining the hard work done by Ayanokouji-kun. He is literally doing everything to save them, even though they hated him." Satou-san joined the conversation.

"I know, right. I felt like our class was really coming together until this happened." Shinohara-san said.

"Have you guys noticed Hirata-kun's behaviour recently. He stopped talking to anyone since this happened. Him being distant and Ayanokouji-kun, Kushida-san and Matsushita-san being busy in the case has really left our class leaderless." I said.

Since, it got announced that Ike and Yamauchi are going to be expelled. Hirata-kun has been distant.

"Hopefully, from now it will be better. Since, Ayanokouji-kun will be back."

When we reached our classroom, we noticed an anomaly. The name plate that said Class D, now showed Class C.

"Hey, are we in the right place?" asked Mori-san.

"Yes, we are. This is our classroom. Look inside, everyone from our class are here." I said.

There was a commotion going on inside, everyone were confused and talking with others.

"Hey, have you checked your points balance?" asked Mei-chan as we entered the class.

"No, I don't have any points. So, why ruin my mood by checking it." answered Shinohara-san.

We all nodded too. Since, we're didn't receive any points this month. I stopped checking my account.

"Then you guys are in for a surprise. Check it now!" she exclaimed.

I opened the application which showed the points and what I saw shocked me.

＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝

Points balance -

51,570

Deposit-
＋49,500 ～ 5th July

＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝＝

I had saved 2,070 points last month but somehow 49,500 points were deposited yesterday.

"How did this happened? Even if we got the points due this month. It would have been 9,500 according to our class points." mentioned Ichihashi.

"That's why the whole class is in an uproar. Everybody is wondering about the same question."

At that moment Kushida-san and Matsushita-san entered the classroom. Whole class surrounded them and started asking questions.

"Please calm down, class. We might lose points because of this." Matsushita-san said loudly.

As the crowd calmed down. She continued.

"Once, Kiyotaka-kun arrives. He will explain everything."

Although, people were reluctant. They went back to their seats. That's shows how much they respected Kiyotaka. At one mention of his name, they instantly follow the orders of the co-leaders of our class.

But if the day could have gotten any more surprising, it did. Sodou, Ike and Yamauchi, all of whom were expected to be either suspended or expelled entered the classroom.

Hirata-kun who was silently staring into the space till now, got up from his seat.

"Sudou-kun, Ike-kun and Yamauchi-kun, how are you here? I thought you all were going to get expelled." he asked.

"Where is Ayanokouji-kun? We want to know as well." said Sodou.

"Yeah, one moment we are waiting to go to prison and the next moment they let us free." Ike said.

"Wait, even you guys don't know how you are still in this school?" asked Yukimura-kun.

"No. We are grateful, trust me we are. But how in the world did we got saved. We don't know." Sodou said.

As the bell rang signalling the start of homeroom. Chabashira-sensei and Kiyotaka walked in while discussing about something.

On seeing Kiyotaka, everybody started asking questions. But one look from him silenced everyone.

"I know that everybody here have got some questions but Sae-sensei will explain everything." he said and sat down on his seat at the back.

"First of all, Congratulations for becoming Class C. This is the first time in the history of the school that a Class D has been promoted. Although, you all didn't do anything. Honestly, if Ayanokouji was not here then you would have been begging for points to the other cla-"

"Sae-sensei, you can deprecate them later. But first explain the situation." Kiyotaka interrupted Chabashira-sensei's rant. I think he is the only one who could do that and get away with it.

"Yes, anyways. You are now the new Class C. If you have noticed that you received the points for this month. You received 49,500 points because Class C has 495 class points. Any questions?"

"Yes, how did we suddenly reached Class C? How did we get 495 CP? How are Ike, Yamauchi and Sodou still here?" asked Horikita-san rapidly.

"Two words- Ayanokouji Kiyotaka."

Okay, now she is just fangirling.

"He proved that Class C were falsely accusing Sodou, Ike and Yamauchi. As a result, he made they them compensate with 400 class points and all of their private points."

Oh, she is totally justified for fangirling. I would too, if I wasn't his best friend. Not a flex, it's a fact.

"You mean Ayanokouji saved us?" asked Yamauchi.

"Yes, you morons. Or your life was ruined."

Sodou instantly got up and hugged Kiyotaka, who was patting his back awkwardly.

"Thank you man, you saved me from suspension and my basketball career. I promise that from now on no more fighting." he said earnestly.

Ike and Yamauchi followed with their own hugs. This time Kiyotaka was barely holding himself back from running away.

"We too promise that we will change our ways. From now on we will behave properly." they said.

"Also, to the whole class and especially the girls. We apologize for our behavior. We made you all uncomfortable with our actions and we will change it for the better." they addressed the class.

Is there any other miracles left, maybe sun rising from the east. Earth revolving around the moon.

Suddenly, Hirata-kun got up from his seat, went towards Kiyotaka and hugged him.

Kiyotaka's face was priceless, so I didn't waste this opportunity to capture a picture. His awkward side was really cute.

"Thank you, Ayanokouji-kun. I thought about everything but still couldn't find a way to save them but you did it."

Everyone else was watching the scene with interest, especially the girls.

"That's all good but how did you turn this hopeless situation of three students of our class getting expelled to getting 400 points as a settlement?" Horikita-san asked.

"It's confidential, I can't elaborate more. Hope you all understand that."

"Who cares, the important thing is that Ayanokouji-kun saved us. I am already thinking about things, I can buy this month." said Shinohara-san.

"Actually, about that. Remember, I told you about the class saving account. We are going to start collecting from this month. Class B is

using the same strategy and havs already surpassed 2 million."

"Whoa, 2 million points. How did they save that much."

"They are saving for the last three months, considering 40 students. It's not that much. But we need to cover up, so every month 50 percent of all the points we get will be credited to the savings account. It could really benefit in the long term. If a situation like this arises once more and I couldn't save them from getting expelled. We could use 20 million points to save them." he explained.

Instantly, the central figures of the class agreed.

"Look, I know that giving up 24,750 points is really hard. But think of it as this way. In normal circumstances we were only going to get 9,500 points but now we have 15,250 bonus points, you would still have 24,750 to spend."

That was certainly a better perspective. With that everybody started sending points to an account which was issued by the school for especially our class with the help of Chabashira-sensei.

Everybody willingly sent their points in the class except for one.

"Hey, Kouenji. Transfer half of your points would you?" asked Yukimura.

"I will do no such things. This points will be used to save the class members, right? I don't need such savings. So, why should I contribute to your charity." Kouenji said with his usual attitude.

Before the situation could get out of hands. Kiyotaka interfered.

"It's okay guys, it just means if a situation arises where Kouenji needs saving. We are not responsible for him. So, there is no need to force him. It's the same for everybody else. If you don't feel like contributing then you wouldn't be our responsibility. If Class C attacks again. You might get expelled." he said which cleared any hesitation, anybody had towards this strategy.

With that our first day as the new Class C started.

_____

Class C Savings Account-

July-

965,250 PPt- Class Contributions
1,600,000 PPt- Settlement
Total- 2,565,250 PPt

_____

Class Rankings -

Month- July

Class A- (Sakayanagi)- 1035 CP
Class B- (Ichinose)- 640 CP
Class C- (Ayanokouji)- 495 CP
Class D- (Ryūen)- 175 CP

_____

It took Ayanokouji, not even 1 month to equal the amount Ichinose and Class B saved since April.

If you feel like the private points they got from Ryūen's class is too much then keep in mind that they got 8.26 million points since they started the school.

So it's like 19% of the total amount is what they got. Personally, I think it's pretty reasonable. Considering that Ryūen's class has more sensible students than Ayanokouji's class, so they would save more.

One more thing, from now on I will the classes will be known by their leaders name. Since it's too confusing once there position changes.

How did you liked the fight or more like Kiyotaka just hitting Yamauchi's dad.

This will be the last chapter of volume 2, next will be the short stories. I have some good ideas about that.

But the main focus would be the island exam. I think, I would like to take a week off, to plan something good.

I have got a discord server where you can suggest me some ideas about the story or the special exams.

Here is the link-
https://discord.com/invite/9f2AygBC

Feel free to join and contribute to the story

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

SS-The Genius

Reads: 1309 | Votes: 58 | Comments: 18

Amikura Mako POV-

5th June

"Hey guys, look who's joining us for lunch? It's the Ayanokouji Kiyotaka." I announced loudly gaining the attention of not only my friends but the whole cafeteria.

"Why are you announcing me, like I am a celebrity?" the humble Ayanokouji - Humblekouji asked.

"Because you are one dummy." he looked confused.

"Anyways, meet Shibata Sou, Hamaguchi Tetsuya, Beppu Ryouta, Andou Sayo and Kobashi Yume." I introduced him to my friends.

"Hey, nice to meet you all." he waved politely. Everyone waved back and greeted him.

"Come on sit down, for how long do you plan to just stand there?" I said by signalling him to sit down in the empty seat beside me.

"So, Ichinose is not here?" he asked as he sat down.

"Why is someone missing her? Am I not enough for you? Oh, the betrayal." I said in a dramatic way by wiping my fake tears.

"You know why I am asking, most of the time she is with you." he said, apparently unaffected by my acting.

"She is busy today. She has her student council interview. Hopefully, she gets in."

"Yeah, she is the most qualified for the position. I heard she was the

student council president in her last school." said Sayo-chan.

"I don't know, it might sound selfish but if she is admitted in the student council. She wouldn't be able to have enough time to lead our class. Plus, she wouldn't hang out with us." said Sou-kun.

"Nah, don't worry about that. I am sure she wouldn't just abandon us." Sayo-chan argued .

"Yeah, Sou-kun. She wouldn't, or are you worried that you wouldn't be able to spend some time with her?" I asked him with a teasing smile.

"I know that you are teasing, but I am serious here." he said seriously.

"You are no fun."

As I looked at Ayanokouji-kun, he was staring at a blonde guy who was enjoying his time with girls.

“He seems really popular. Those girls around him are all third years.” I said.

Ayanokouji-kun looked back at me.

"Oh yeah, he is from my class. His name is Kouenji. The only thing I know is that he is rich and heir to a conglomerate." he said.

I overheard some of the conversation between Kouenji and the older girls.

"Here, Kouenji-kun, say ‘Ahh!’" one of them said.

“Ha ha! Just as I thought, more mature girls are the best.”

He certainly didn’t act shy at all around the third-year ladies. Rather, he ate his food while they practically pressed up against him.

“That guy is really something else,” Ayanokouji-kun muttered.

“What about you, Ayanokouji-kun? Do you like girls like Honami-chan?” I asked.

"Huh, I don't know. I mean, I guess whoever isn't disgusted by me?" he said with hesitation.

"Disgusted? You are joking, right?"

His didn't look like he was joking.

"Oh, you're serious. Well, know now something, Ayanokouji-kun? You’ve caught the girl's eyes for a little while now. You’re on a first-year student's ranking chart.”

“Caught their eye? Me? Also, what the hell kind of ranking?” He looked genuinely confused.

“Well, there are lots of different rankings, you know? The hot guy rankings. The rich guy rankings. The creeper rankings. And—”

"Okay, that’s enough. I don’t think I want to hear any more.”

"Don’t worry. You’re ranked an awesome second place in the hot guy rankings. Congratulations! By the way, Satonaka-kun in Class A is in first place. Hirata-kun from your class is third. The fourth is Hashimoto-kun from Class A and fifth place is Sou-kun here. I feel like Satonaka-kun gets lots of points because he is famous, apparently he is a movie star or else you would have been at the top.”

“Is it okay for me to be happy about that?” he asked.

“Of course. Oh, also in the genius guy rankings you are ranked first. So, in a way you are the guy every girl would like to be with, not only you have the looks but also the brains.”

“Let’s see…” I opened the rankings in my cell phone.

There really were a lot of different ranking charts.

"That's a rather disturbing ranking titled, 'Boys Who Should Die.' Although, I think I already know who tops that one.“ he said.

"Are you not really happy about it? You're ranked first and second in two categories."

"I guess if I cared about popularity it'd be different, but I don't really feel anything."

"Bro, I am fifth and I freaked out. How can you not feel anything? Come on, man. All the girls like you." Sou-kun said.

Ayanokouji just shrugged.

"So, does everyone participate in this?" he asked.

"Well, not everyone, but lots of people do. I don't know the exact number of votes, though. The comments are also anonymous."

"Hey, A-Ayanokouji-kun. Did you have a girlfriend in junior highschool?" asked Yume-chan shyly.

Since, Ayanokouji-kun joined us. She haven't said a word and now she is talking shyly.....Oh! So that's the reason.

"Actually, I never went to any school before this. I was homeschooled." he answered.

"Wait so, you never had a girlfriend ever before?" asked Sou-kun.

"No, I never even had a friend before coming here, so having a girlfriend is a long shot isn't it?" he said.

"That's not fair. How can someone let their child live like that? Not that I am saying that your parents were bad or anything." said Yume-chan.

"I can't complain. It did made me decent in academics." he said.

"Decent? You haven't lost a single mark in any of the tests that happened. You have the perfect academic OAA." I said, he ignored that.

"But still, it's not good having no human interaction in that age." Ryouta-kun said.

"What happened, has happened. I don't linger on it anymore. Now, I have many friends and awesome classmates. That's all that matters."

"Ayanokouji-kun, you are really optimistic and strong minded. I don't think anybody could have lived like that, much less become a genius." Yume-chan said.

"Yume-chan, are you done complementing your crush." I said.

"Wha-What?! No, it's not like that. I don't like Ayanokouji-kun, I mean, I don't hate him. I do like him. I-I-" she started stuttering.

"It's okay, I get it. You don't want to reveal it too soon. Ayanokouji-kun, can you pretend you didn't hear that?"

He gave me another confused look. Sheesh, this guy is more denser than a black hole.

Soon, the lunch break was over. We finished our meals and got up.

"You guys can go ahead. I will join you later." I said to my classmates.

"Ooh, someone wants some alone tim-"

"Don't try, only I know how to tease Sayo-chan."

She made an unsatisfied face and left with the others.

I waited for Ayanokouji-kun to pack his bento box.

"So, you know how to cook too."

"I was taught by Chiaki. Although, still can't make anything complex."

"Ah, another betrayal. My heart can't take these many. How many girls are you cheating on?"

But he ignored me, he's invulnerable to my attacks!

"I was going to ask you, how did Class B lost so many class points. You guys were third in the mid terms, so you got 90 points from

that. So, your class points went down by 100 points." he said as we walked back to our class.

"Yup, we lost 100 points due to disciplinary issues."

"But from what I know about Class B, you guys are the most disciplined class after Class A."

"It wasn't actually our fault. Well, it all started after the S system was revealed and it became known that classes are competing for the top spot. Class C started harassing my classmates. They would do in such a manner that they wouldn't be caught. This took a mental hit on many students, they started being absent. They wouldn't pay attention in the classes. This was just the basic stuff. Class C students would blame Class B for breaking some rules and much more."

"So, basically Class C targeted Class B to bring down there points. Even though it's wrong. You can't deny that It is a smart move. As of this month, there is only a 65 points difference between Class C and Class B. One more month of this shenanigans and you guys will lose your position."

"There is no need for worry. Honami-chan noticed it and took the necessary steps immediately. All the Class B students are on alert now. If Class C attempts something, they would be caught. It will not happen again."

"Well, I am happy to hear that Class B is doing alright. Still, if you need any help. Just ask."

"Aw, you are willing to help me. Is this love?"

"Okay, I am out of here before you go all out on me." he said before leaving.

I went back to my class. As I sat down, waiting for the teacher to arrive. I thought about my friendship with the charming genius Ayanokouji Kiyotaka.

Even though, he is from another class. I feel like, I have a genuine friendship with him.

Talking to him about anything is really easy. He never makes you feel ignored. Moreover, he is the only one who is resistant to my charms.

I hope that for the next three years, we make many good memories together.

This is the first of the three SS planned.

This story is now no.1 in Kiyotaka. So, Hurray. Thanks to all of you.

How did you like Mako's Pov.

I think, I went a little overboard on her teasing characteristic but I have very less information about her character. So, it might be a little OOC.

It is really fun writing Pov's of characters other than Ayanokouji. Next one will be from the POV of Ayanokouji

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

SS-The Amusement Park

Reads: 1147 | Votes: 51 | Comments: 21

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka POV-

15th July

"Good morning. It's good to see that everyone is present." I said looking at the crowd of 38 present in front of me. We all stood in the lobby of the dormitory building.

"Ayanokouji-kun, is it something important? I am not complaining but our finals ended yesterday. So we thought that today we will take a break." said Nishimura.

"Yes, it is important. The reason, I called all 38 of you today is a surprise."

"Why isn't Kouenji here? Shouldn't he be here too?" protested Sodou.

"I don't want to waste my time on something which I know wouldn't happen."

"But Ayanokouji-kun, what is the surprise?" asked Ichihashi.

"The surprise is..... I bought unlimited rides passes for the amusement park for everybody. I understand that you all have worked hard in the last few weeks. So, as a good leader, it's my responsibility to give you all a treat."

"Holy Shit!!!"

"I can't believe my ears."

"Let's freaking go!!"

"You're the best leader Ayanokouji-kun."

"Calm down, calm down. But that would have cost a lot. How did you pay for it." Horikita asked.

"It did, 168,000 points to be exact. I paid it from the points we got from Class D."

"Free vacations are the best!"

Everybody started cheering and discussing about what they would do for today.

"Before you all start to make plans for the day, there is a catch."

"Huh, what do you mean?"

"You will be spending your day in the groups of four."

"Oh, that's not bad. Most of us would adjust." said Kei.

"Let me finish, a group of four people will consist of four people who are not friends."

"Wait, what?"

"Last few months, I have been observing the class and it has come to my notice that our class is divided into groups. Outside of those groups, interactions are rare. Now, I don't oppose having a close friend group but that doesn't mean you don't talk to others."

"For the next three years, this is your class. So, it is extremely vital for cohesion to exist between us."

"But you said, we will enjoy the day. How can we do that without our friends."

"I understand that, but who is stopping you to enjoy with your group mates. They are your classmates too."

"I agree with Ayanokouji-kun, we should give this a try. Who knows maybe at the end of the day, we would have gained new friends."

Kikyou supported me as always.

"I will also agree with Ayanokouji-kun, this is an excellent chance for us to know our classmates better." Hirata spoke.

It was inevitable for others, when the three of the class pillars agree on something. There is little you can do to oppose them.

"So, is everybody in agreement?"

"Yes!" everyone replied.

"Good, now some final rules for the day. It is 9 am already. You have till 6 pm to enjoy the rides and plan your day. Lunch is not sponsored, so you have to use your own points. But after 6 pm, all of us will meet back at the location sent in the group chat. Clear?"

Everybody nodded.

"To ensure that nobody abandons their group, Sotomura hear have set up a device which would monitor all of your location. If anybody is found to be separated from their designated group. Then all of the group members would have to pay 42,000 points each."

"What! I am sticking to my group members like a leech."

"Good, I have sent the groups in the class chat group. You can check it out and form the groups beforehand."

Group 1-
Hirata Yousuke
Sonoda Chiyo
Hondo Ryoutaro
Rino Akari

Group 2-
Kushida Kikyou
Ijuuin Wataru
Nishimura Ryuuko
Makida Susumu

Group 3-
Matsushita Chiaki
Yamauchi Haruki
Yokoyama Misaki
Ueno Itsuki

Group 4-
Inogashira Kokoro
Onizuka Kiyoshi
Mori Nene
Miyamoto Soshi

Group 5-
Yukimura Teruhiko
Shinohara Satsuki
Ike Kanji
Azuma Sana

Group 6-
Karuizawa Kei
Miyake Akito
Hasabe Haruka
Minami Hakuo

Group 7-
Sodou Ken
Onodera Kayano
Kikuchi Eita
Ichihashi Ruri

Group 8-
Wang Mei-yu
Minami Setsuya
Maezono Masami
Sotomura Hideo

Group 9-
Okitani Kyousuke
Satou Maya
Sugawara Kazuto
Ishikura Kayoko

Group 10-
Horikita Suzune
Sakura Airi
Ayanokouji Kiyotaka
Asahina Nazuna

"Wait, who is this Asahina Nazuna?" Ike asked.

"She is a friend from second year."

"But you said that no frien-"

Ike stopped speaking when I blankly stared at him.

"No problem, I don't have a problem. Yamauchi, why do you have a problem?"

"I don't have a problem."

As there antics continued, we formed the groups. As I looked around, I saw many of my classmates standing awkwardly in their groups.

This would be a good test for them. Not only they have to cooperate with others. But each group would have to make decisions for which ride they want to go first or when to take a refreshment break.

If this class becomes even 50% of what Class B is in terms of cohesion. It would be a lot easier for me.

Suzune and Sakura joined me as others boarded the bus which pickups the tourist for the amusement park.

Finally when everyone had boarded the bus, Nazuna arrived.

"Sorry, I am late. I overslept."

"It's okay, come on let's go."

As our group boarded the bus, I gave the driver the signal to drive.

We sat down at the back of the bus.

"Ayanokouji-kun, I was thinking of joining the photography club. It might be interesting." Sakura was the first one to speak.

Looking at the Sakura sitting beside me, nobody would recognize her. She was clearly different from the old Sakura.

I still remember the day, when she entered the classroom without her spectacles and untied hair.

Many boys had to pickup their jaws off the floor. Since then she is more confident and interacts with her study group members often.

"Of course, if you think it will help you grow. Then go for it." I galvanized her.

As she got busy looking outside the window, I looked at Nazuna, who was sitting silently.

"Hey, you aren't talkative today?"

"It's just, I feel like a stranger intruding on all of you. It is a class vacation and I am not a member of your class." she said softly.

"Don't think like that, I was the one who invited you. Moreover, this is a vacation for making new friends. So, it's the perfect opportunity for you to do so. Now, take that black haired stone for example." I said as I pointed towards Horikita.

Horikita glared at me. Even though she has been making friends with her study group, she haven't left her antisocial personality.

If anyone outside of her social circle tries to approach her, she gives them the cold treatment.

"She doesn't have friends either, look at her so lonely."

With each words the temperature around Horikita dropped significantly.

"Ayanokouji-kun, it has been many days since you had a taste of my

lethal weapon. Do you want to?"

"See, she clearly doesn't want to be my friend. But you on the other hand are my friend. So, if someone like her has a group of friends then you could literally befriend the whole class."

"Kiyotaka, you are being mean to her. I am really sorry on his behalf." she said to Horikita.

"It's okay. At this point, I am not bothered by his childish comments."

"I do agree on that, he does acts like a child. Whenever we are on a date, it's like I am babysitting a child. Once, I had to drag him away from a Turkish ice-cream shop because he took personal offence when that guy tricked him."

"First of all, I didn't know that he was going to fake giving me an ice-cream and just snatch it away. Secondly, I then destroyed him with my reflexes." I said. It really annoyed me when he took away my ice-cream. Nobody should ever do that unless they want to meet a brutal fate.

"Wait, are you guys dating. You just said that you both were on a date." asked Mori who was sitting in front of me and listening to the whole conversation.

"No! No! It's not like that." Nazuna tried to answer while blushing heavily but Mori overwhelmed her.

"Oh yeah? Then why did Ayanokouji-kun invited a second year girl on a class trip. You must be someone special."

"We are just friends."

"Well, Ayanokouji-kun is friends with Shiina-san from Class C, Mako-san and even Ichinose-san form Class B are also very good friends with him. But he only invited you, hmm...isn't that suspicious?" she tried to scratch her imaginary beard.

"W-wait, really? I mean, I am just a friend." Nazuna looked at me.

"I mean, you are more special to me than being just friends." I said with a straight face.

"Ooh, Ayanokouji-kun has a crush on you. That's the first time, I have seen him interested in a girl. Usually, he just blows off the countless advances made by the girls in our year."

Nazuna was speechless and red.

Before Mori could tease her more, I signaled her to let it go.

Soon, we reached the park. Even though, it was nearly a kilometer and a half away from the dormitories. It's main attraction- a giant Ferris wheel called 'the big O' could be seen from anywhere on the campus.

The security checked our passes and one by one each group was admitted into the park.

As, our group entered the park. We stood and watched each others faces awkwardly. Nobody suggested anything, so I took the lead.

"I think we should start with the most common ride - the roller coaster." I said. Even though this was my first time in an amusement park, thankfully I had done my research.

"I am okay with that." Nazuna said.

"Sorry, I won't go on a rollercoaster. I don't like it." Horikita said.

"Do you have a fear of heights?"

"No."

"Do you get motion sickness?"

"No."

"Then what's the problem?"

"I just don't want to go."

"Oh, you will ride on that rollercoaster. Even if I have to drag you

to it."

Horikita gave me her signature glare but knew that arguing against me was worthless.

As we stood in the waiting line. I saw that none of my classmates had dared to ride the rollercoaster as their first activity. I read the board which contained the information about the ride.

The "Thunder Dolphin" - a roller coaster with a top speed of 130 km/h. The sight of it flying freely through its wavy course evokes the image of a real dolphin. Ithas a maximum speed of 130 km/h and a maximum drop of 80 degrees. That's very close to the sensation of a free fall.

The rollercoaster ran through the middle of the "Big O" which was something new.

Finally, when it was our turn. Nazuna and I sat together and Sakura, Horikita sat together.

It was my first time on a rollercoaster and it was worth it. Even though I didn't shout or cry out in excitement like the others, which was weird. But it was fun.

Everyone were shaken to their core. Horikita sat down on a bench in shock. Sakura was standing numb, her hair looked like she had survived a hurricane.

"Nazuna, why were you shouting during the drop?" I asked her after we got off the rollercoaster.

"Huh? What do you mean?" Nazuna still hadn't recovered fully.

I let the topic go. I guess that's what humans do, when they are on a rollercoaster.

For the next one, I decided to take it easy on my companions and took them to the haunted house. Although, for some reason they thought that it was the opposite of taking it easy.

The board informed us about the backstory of the haunted house.

Onryou Zashiki (English name: Tatami Room of Apparitions) Beneath this house of horrors lies the body of Yoko, whose husband, along with his mistress, conspired to kill her with a poisoned face powder. Can you explore the house to find her ghost, apply an antidote to her face, and thus help her find peace? Or will Yoko kill you of fright first? Take off your shoes and step into this haunted Japanese home-and be careful, as your bare feet may be vulnerable to attack...

We exited the house and sat down on the bench near the attraction.

Sakura was on the verge of crying, Horikita was shivering and Nazuna was holding on to me like a small child.

I still didn't understand what the fuss was about, I mean they already warned us that all the jump scares would be from underneath us. Which took out the element of surprise for me, I guess not everyone read that board or didn't understand it.

Or I am just dead inside....

Next stop was the 'Wonder Drop'. It was a water slide in which a capsule like ride which had a limit of four person, travelled in a slow and relaxing speed until suddenly we were dropped into the water from a height of 3 floors. Fortunately, we had brought ponchos which protected us from getting wet.

My companions escaped unscathed from this one as it was not that scary or they might have gotten used to this.

After several more such thrilling rides like Pirate Ship, Kamikaze, Top Spin, Sky Flyer, Flying UFO, Gravitron. We finally took a break for lunch.

We sat down in a cafe that served snacks at an affordable price. Every other food vendors were selling at an unreasonably high price.

We were reunited with many of our classmates. They too were taking break.

"Hey guys, how it's going?" said Kei, as she and her group which

consisted of Akito, Hasabe and Minami joined us.

"It was good, although the rides aren't that scary." I said.

"Aren't that scary? For the last few hours, I have been in a constant state of shock and fear. It's like you are taking revenge on me by intentionally choosing the scariest rides." Horikita ranted.

"I mean it wasn't that bad. Yes, they were scary. But that's the fun of it." Nazuna came to my rescue.

"Anyways, what did you guys do?" I asked Kei.

"Oh we went to this go kart racing, then we watched the fountain show. Next, there was this relaxing merry go round on water. We chilled there for a bit. After that there was the laser tag and finally we went in the 'Big O' which is like a karaoke in the sky. It was so much fun. We took it easy as most of us other than Miyake-kun don't like scary rides."

So, those are the relaxing rides. Oh! That's why Horikita is mad. All of the rides, that I took them to were the opposite of taking it easy.

I side glanced at Horikita, who was giving me a look that said 'you are an idiot.' While Sakura was politely smiling. Poor her, she couldn't even protest against me. Nazuna was pretty much okay as she was the least affected.

After the lunch. I re-evaluated my itenary and chose the actual relaxing rides. We started off with the go-kart racing.

I had learned how to drive it from the internet-sensei. So, there was no surprise when I finished last. It was my first time! Cut me some slack.

But due to my competitive nature, I dragged all of my companions for another race. Which I won comfortably.

"How did you come first, when you finished last in the previous attempt?" asked Nazuna.

"I just had to get a hang of it." I replied nonchalantly.

Next we went to the laser tag. I was fascinated with the game. Although, I was dispirited to know that they used infrared rays instead of real lasers. That would have increased the stakes. But it would have been a safety hazard.

But the idea of a simulated battle that involved guns, landmines, hand grenades and my favorite grenade launchers was appealing.

We met with Yukimura's group there. The game was decided to be 4 Vs 4.

It was safe to say that we had fun destroying my opponents. Although, Ike and Shinohara's bickering helped too.

After that we went to the Carousel and then to the Bumper Cars.

We decided that the 'Big O' would be our last stop, so we attended the 'Water Symphony'. It was a fountain show of water, sound and light.

The sun was already low on the horizon, so the light show was better than it would have been in the daytime. It was a really creative and cool show.

Finally, we arrived at the main attraction of the amusement park. The 'Big O"

It was a centreless Ferris wheel of diameter 90 metres. Almost as tall as the Statue Of Liberty. It had 10 karaoke gondolas. It was the 36th biggest Ferris wheel in the world. Which is truly amazing considering it was built for the amusement park of a highschool.

Each ride was of 30 minutes. The cabin space of the gondolas were enough to fit 6 people.

As the gondola reached the maximum height. The whole school campus was in view. Even the Tokyo city was visible.

The sun had just set by this time and the twilight sky was dazzlingly beautiful, as beautiful as the girl sitting beside me.

I looked at Nazuna, who was looking at the view outside with an

expression of awe.

Sitting here, looking at these people. I realize that life is truly beautiful if you know how to enjoy it.

All my life, I have never wished to be in someone else's shoes. But in this moment, what I wouldn't give to be in their place, feel an ounce of the happiness and excitement they are feeling.

But the truth is I can't. That place made me like this.

No, I made myself like this.

It didn't mattered.

So, I just sat there. Imagining what the others were feeling, right now.

To be continued.....

The next one will be the last SS before the Volume 3.

I have sketched out a rough plan for the island exam arc and it is insane.

I hope you all will like it. I have dropped my plans of a week hiatus to plan volume 3, instead the updates would be slower.

Most likely two or three chapters per week.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

SS-The Birthday

Reads: 1213 | Votes: 50 | Comments: 28

"How much more we have to wait?" asked Horikita.

"Don't act like a child, Suzune."

"After the amount of mental trauma, you have given me today. You don't have the rights to say anything."

"What do you mean? Yeah, the rides were a little intense but they were fun right?"

I looked at my group and apparently no-one agreed with me.

"Nazuna? Sakura? You both joined her side."

Both of them had an apologetic look on their faces. Oh! The betrayal.

While I was busy enjoying myself, Horikita had manipulated them to join her side.

"Anyways, there's still 10 minutes to 6. So, have some patience."

It had been more than twenty minutes, we were standing at the meeting location. Till now, nobody had arrived.

Finally, after 5 minutes. The groups started arriving one by one. It was almost 6:15 when the last group arrived.

It was Okitani's group. The poor guy had to face the combined wrath of the whole Class C.

"Now, that everyone has arrived and you all are done berating Okitani. Can we move on to the second surprise?" I said.

"Second surprise?"

"We have a second surprise!"

"Heck yeah, The fun is still not over."

"Oh, how did I get so lucky to end up in this class."

"Calm down guys, our next stop would be a newly opened Michelin star restaurant present in the campus. We would be going there by the bus. Come on, we don't want to be late."

"Michelin star restaurant! I am going to be stuffed with food tonight."

All of us boarded the same bus which had dropped us off here, in the morning.

The restaurant was a new venture opened at the south-western part of the campus. Closer to the dormitories which is in the western part of this artificial island.

The amusement park was in the extreme east so we had to cover a lot of distance.

Finally, we reached our destination and we got off the bus.

It was a lavish looking restaurant. My classmates couldn't believe that they were going to be treated at this place.

On entering, everyone were confused to why the restaurant was devoid of any customers. For such a fine dining, they were expecting it to be crowded.

"Guys, if you are wondering why there is no one here. That's because I booked the whole place."

"But isn't that a little expensive?" asked Hirata.

"Nah, we deserve it." Ike said.

"I brought you guys here, to experience how it would feel to be the

top class in this school. Right now, we can afford it maybe once a month. But if we become Class A. This will be a regular affair."

"Don't worry Ayanokouji-kun, we will do our best to get to the top." said Mori.

"Good, I expect all of you to behave properly and mind your manners, especially the idiot company. We don't want to be known as the savages."

"Hey, man. Don't do us dirty." Sodou cried.

Everybody ignored him and sat down on the long table arranged especially for 40 people. I sat at the head of the table alongside Nazuna and Kikyou.

The scene looked like one of those royal feasts of old times.

The restaurant served 8 course dinner. The meal started with an amuse-bouche, savory salmon and creme fraiche. It was followed by raw fish served crudo-style.

After the opening bites, a small bowl of soup in three types. Smooth pureed veloute, bisque or light broth. Alongside salad with a variety of dressings.

For the main course, Udon, Unagi and Sushi were served. It was followed by the cheese course. It consisted of cheese with dried fruit and nuts.

Everyone were enjoying there food. Laughter and smiles everywhere. Three months ago, no-one would have imagined that these defects would be living like royals instead of scraping for some points. The improvement and growth they had were tremendous.

Before the desert could arrive, I got up and gently tapped my spoon against my glass, I had seen in the movies that this is done to grab the attention of the people.

But it couldn't be heard over the noise, so I naturally did what any common person would do and threw the glass on the floor.

The shattering of glass got their attention.

"Sorry, it fell from my hand. I would pay for it." I said to the waiter who was glaring at me. For a moment, I thought of buying the whole restaurant just to fire him but then I thought it would have been too petty.

"I am glad that you all are having fun, also I observed that many of you have made new friends. Like Sodou and Onodera or Hasabe over there pestering Miyake. So, it looks like today was a success."

Hasabe pouted at me. While everybody clapped.

"I hope you all are motivated enough to face any challenges the school throws at us soon, together. Keep this memory in your mind when the going gets tough."

"Ayanokouji-kun, why are you talking like there's going to be somewhere kind of test in the near future." asked Kikyou.

"Remember about the summer vacation on the island in the sea that Chabashira-sensei talked about?"

"Yes, if I am not wrong we would be leaving on the morning of 22nd July for it. A week on the cruise ship to the island." replied Chiaki.

"Do you really think our school would give us nice things without any catch. They promised 100% employment rate and it turned out that only Class A gets that. They literally baited us for the whole month of April with sweet lies. Then overwhelmed us with the truth in May."

"That is true, this school is the biggest clickbait in the world. Trust me, I have seen some of the biggest clickbait in YouTube and nothing compares to this." said the Professor.

"Exactly, even though I don't understand what you said. This vacation is clearly a test for us. So, I need you guys to be ready and able."

"Don't worry, Ayanokouji-kun. We will follow your command to

victory." shouted Kei.

Everybody started shouting and hollering until the waiter silenced us. He warned us to maintain decorum.

Looks like we won't be allowed here again.

"Anyways, there is another reason as to why we have gathered here today. During the last week, all of us were busy in preparation for our finals. So, we didn't get the time to celebrate the birthdays of Akito and Keisei. So, we wish you a belated happy birthday."

Keisei and Akito looked embarrassed as everybody wished them. I told the waiter to bring in the cake.

It was a triple tier cake with three different flavors in different tiers.

The ceremony proceeded with the cake cuttings. Then the deserts arrived. A scoop of sorbet with a selection of fresh fruits and petit fours alongside tea and coffee with cookies were served.

But my favorite ice-cream chan arrived at last. From there on, I only remember ice-cream chan and ignored everything else.

After everything was done, we finally exited the restaurant at 9 pm. We had to walk back to our dorms as there was no bus. Thankfully, the dorms wasn't far away.

Everybody walked in groups. The pleasant night breeze made it enjoyable to walk after a heavy dinner.

Maxima and I were walking together. Sensing the opportunity, I held her hands. We decided to take a detour and spend some time at my favorite spot behind the third year dorms building.

We both sat down on the bench. Nazuna had her head on my shoulder. With the full moon lighting the night, gave Nazuna an angelic glow.

"Hey, did you enjoy today?" I asked softly.

She just nodded.

"Too tired to talk?"

"No, I just don't wanna talk to you." she said with a mischievous grin.

"Hey! You should really appreciate that I am giving you my shoulder to rest. Moreover, who ignores a guy who just spent 500k points on a date."

"What! 500,000 points?"

"Yep, that restaurant costs a lot."

"But 500,000 points spent in a day!"

"It's not like this is an everyday occurrence. Calm down, you are more worried than my classmates."

"Yeah, because they don't even know it."

"Hey, I am a generous leader. Under my leadership you live the best life possible. But you are not going to acknowledge the fact that I did it all for you."

"You did not, you do remember what you said before right?"

"Maybe, I had just planned all of this just to treat you to an amazing day at the amusement park and a 8 course meal at an Michelin star restaurant without spending any of my points."

"To do that you would have to be the smartest person in this school."

"You are saying, I am not?"

"Okay genius, you can't fool me. But I am thankful for today."

"It was a shame that Fūka-senpai couldn't join us."

"Yep."

We both were silent for a while.

"Hey, can I confess something to you." I broke the silence.

"H-huh, c-confess?" she said nervously.

"Yes, I wanted to tell you this for a long time. I don't want to keep you in the dark."

"What do you mean?"

"It's about Nagumo."

"Nagumo! I thought that-, never mind."

"Yes, I take it you already know how he is the unofficial ruler of second year."

"Of course, he is in my class."

"Yeah, what if I said that he is the reason for your circumstances."

"What kind of circumstances?" Her voice was shaky.

"You didn't had any friends, whoever came in contact with you would just run away. Why?"

"I-It's because of my mannerisms r-right? How I behave, people don't l-like me because of who I am, right?" she said as tears escaped from her eyes. This was a sensitive topic for her.

I softly caressed her cheeks and wiped her tears.

"That's not true."

"What do you mean?"

"I am going to tell you a story. Hear it with an open mind. You can call me a liar but I have proof."

"What story Kiyotaka, what are you talking about?"

Flashback - (10th July)

I was in my cabin in the student council office, finishing my tasks as the treasurer. When I heard a knock on my cabin's door.

"Come in."

The door opened and Nagumo entered. But he was not alone, he had brought five giants like students from his class.

Although they weren't as big as Albert. But all of them together would have overwhelmed him easily.

From the OAA app, I knew they were NPC's as Professor likes to call them. But for a person who didn't know it would be intimidated by their build.

Nagumo sat down on the seat in front of me and rested his legs on the table.

"I would appreciate if you keep your legs off my table. It's good manners." I said nonchalantly, spinning the pen that I was holding in my fingers.

Subtly, I clicked the button type mechanism. It was a click pen, so it looked like I was retracting the nip but actually it was to start the recorder.

During the whole Class C fiasco, I had built many bugs and recorders. I had fixed one of them in the pen that I carry all the time.

You can never be too careful at this school.

"Ayanokouji is your name, isn't it?"

Unfortunately for him, he didn't remove his filthy legs from my table. If I wasn't pissed off before, I was now.

"I didn't know you had a case of amnesia, vice-president Nagumo."

"Don't try to act smart, these guys here is not just for show." He said with a smug expression.

"Okay, so why are you here?"

"I ask the question here, you understand?"

I started laughing. This whole scene was just too funny.

"You think this is funny, let's see if you laugh after they beat you to pulp."

"Haha, it is funny that even though you are a senior you have to use them to try and intimidate me. Ooh, I am shaking."

"You punk, I would have beaten you myself. But I don't even consider you as someone, I would fight."

"That's good or the student council would have to search for a new vice-president."

"Enough! Getting in the student council doesn't mean you are any special. Tell me, what is your relationship with Asahina?"

"What do you mean, she is my good friend."

"Oh yeah, I suppose you fantasize about becoming her boyfriend, right? I know guys like you."

"I mean honestly, yes. I do fantasize of becoming someone special to her, someone she could rely on. But why is that a problem?"

"See, I knew it. Just because you are a little smart, you think you have a chance with a senior? Ridiculous."

"I don't think that I have any chance with her. She deserves someone even better than me but you can't help falling for her. I mean she is just the best. Anybody would be lucky to have her."

"Okay, I get it. You like her. But because I am a generous guy, I am forgiving your past transgressions. So, be the smart one and distance yourself from her. Or it would end badly for you."

"Oh, well I don't care. She is my friend and will continue to be so. Period. Now you can pack your circus and perform somewhere else.

Don't annoy me." I said and got up, ready to pack up and leave for the day.

As I reached towards the door. One of the guy, who I would be calling NPC#1 caught my outstretched hand.

"So, you have chosen death." I said to him.

I gave him a backhanded slap with my other hand. The speed of the slap worked as a stun. His hold on my hand loosen.

I tripped him over and walked over his fallen body to reach the door.

"Nagumo, if you really want to have any hope of intimidate me. Try bringing the whole of second year." I said in a heavy voice.

I exited the room, leaving behind several shocked second years.

As the voice recording ended, I looked at Nazuna.

"B-But, I thought that it was me."

"No, it wasn't you. It was Nagumo, scaring off everyone who dared to talk to you."

"Why would he do that?"

"My Best guess, he likes you."

"What!"

"Yes, his plan was to isolate you. Make you vulnerable, convince you that the fault lies with you. When you are at your lowest, he would come and save you from the pitiful loneliness. It's manipulation 101."

"I can't believe it. I really thought that he was a nice guy. Even though he was the ruler of second year, he would still talk to me sometimes. I was a fool to think that anybody in this damn world

would care about me."

Her shoulders slumped, eyes red by crying. Even in this state she looked adorable.

I held her chin up and looked into her purple eyes. They were brimming with emotions.

"You know, you are a fool to think that nobody in this world cares about you. I don't if you heard the recording properly or not but I was ready to take on 5 physically built seniors than abandoning you."

"I know this maybe too over ambitious but I want to be the one who would care about you. I want to be the one who will always be by your side. Your partner in crime."

"K-Kiyotaka, I-I"

"Shh, let me finish. The last few weeks every moment spent with you was worth it for me, every date we had. Even if others might find you weird. But I adore every small things you do."

"Nazuna, I know you deserve the best this world has to offer but would you like to go out with me?"

Nazuna was speechless, she went into a trance. I gently hugged her and patted her head.

"Hey, you don't have to answer now. Next week, I would be leaving for the summer vacation. You can answer anytime before that or even after I come back. Although, I would prefer before as it would really ease my mind. I could focus on the challenges we would face but it's okay, there's no hurry. Now, I am just rambli-"

"Yes." Nazuma cut me off with a single word.

"You mean-"

"Yes, I would love to go out with you, Ayanokouji Kiyotaka. You have treated me better than anyone ever did. The fact that I like you also helps."

"Okay... I don't know what to do now." I said awkwardly.

"Huh?"

"I mean, I never expected to succeed. This is my first time asking someone out so... What should I do?"

Nazuna started giggling.

"Hey, don't make fun of me. I had to take advice from internet-sensei to ask you out."

"Don't worry, it's first time for me too. We will explore this together." she said with determination.

With the awkwardness gone, we started talking about random things. It was nearly 11pm when we finally went back to our rooms.

As I lay down on my bed, I thought about today. Finally, after two months my plan had come to fruition.

During the month of May, I had already started planning to take down Nagumo. After a thorough investigation about him, I found out his strengths and weaknesses.

One of which gained my interest. When I found out about Asahina Nazuna, how Nagumo liked her and what he was doing to her. I started forming my plan.

The chance meeting at the lunch break wasn't a coincidence. I specifically wanted to ask her on a date, the previous year paper just gave me the reason to do just that.

Then I had cut any contact with her for a month. Making her feel like I had abandoned her like others. Then after a month, calling her myself to invite her to the date.

From there on every date, every complements, every action carefully orchestrated to develop her feelings for me.

Kiryuin intentionally speaking about Nazuna being my girlfriend in the meeting, when Nagumo was present was planned too. I knew

that once he got jealous, he would try to confront me. Which would give me the perfect weapon to use for turning Nazuna against him.

From the start, I wanted her to join my side. Turning Nagumo's weakness against him would be instrumental in my future plans.

Sun Tzu said- "To secure ourselves against defeat lies in our own hands, but the opportunity of defeating the enemy is provided by the enemy himself."

Nagumo did just that. He made my work easier by breaking down Nazuna. I just had to do was build her back up.

Now, that this work is done. I can fully focus on the tests we will face in this summer vacation.

I think this should have been a proper chapter rather than a SS but none the less. It is what it is.

Akito's and Yukimura's birthdays are on 11th and 13th July so I thought why not give them some treat. I have never seen anyone mentioning their birthday.

Yes, Kiyotaka doesn't actually like Nazuna. I think, it would have too unrealistic for him to change this quickly.

But how did you liked the manipulation. I was actually planning this since, the mid terms. Finally, Kiyotaka has his first girlfriend.

But it doesn't mean that Koji will always remain like this. He would start changing gradually.

Next will be the volume 3 prologue.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Volume 3- Prologue

Reads: 963 | Votes: 43 | Comments: 9

Another fragment of memory to be dug up.

In the process of erasing unnecessary memories, there are things that come to mind.

“Take your seat and state your name.”

State your name—.The brain received the instruction, and the brain quickly transmitted the signal to the throat.

"Kiyotaka.”

It was a symbol. A sequence of letters. An important element to distinguish humans. All of us White Room students were taught names as one of the ways to identify individuals. However, when we were young, we weren’t told our surnames, and all the instructors called us by our first names.

Although I had no way of knowing it at the time, there would be an inconvenience created by teaching us our surnames. It seems that it was a rule based on the fear that it might lead to the children’s identification in the future. By the time the children were four years old, a new curriculum was beginning to be implemented one after another.

"Now then, let’s commence the test.”

The most important of these was a written test. All students straightened their posture and faced the test papers. The test consisted of ten writing systems: hiragana, katakana, English alphabets, Numbers, Latin alphabets, Devanagri, Greek alphabets, Chinese characters, Arabic alphabets and simple kanji.

Since we’d already spent a whole year being thoroughly taught

reading and writing when we were three, there was no hesitation in their fingertips' movements as they held the pen.

The students were penalized by corporal punishment, if they didn't achieve a certain level of performance in a limited amount of time. In addition, the students were also required to have good handwriting.

Even if your handwriting was good, you won't receive any points if you get the answer wrong, but if you write poorly in a hurry, points will be deducted from your score, so we had to be careful.

No one at this facility asked whether or not we can solve the problems we face. This is only true because the only children left were those that were capable of solving them. Those who couldn't were dropped at the age of three.

Our group, called the fourth generation, had a total of 74 students in the early years. However, as mentioned above, children who were deemed to be unable to do so at the age of three had already dropped out of the White Room. Therefore, all 61 of us then shared almost all of our time together, excluding bedtime.

The written test was 60 minutes long, but there was enough time to complete it in about half to two-thirds of the time limit if we solved the questions without hesitation. This was true for all the previous written exams held in the White Room.

Solve the equation and move on to the next. Determine the answer and write it down. At the same time, you review the previous question to see if you've made any mistakes.

When I finished, I raised my right hand straight up. After signaling that I was done, I turned the paper over. Getting a perfect score on the written exam was the minimum requirement. At the same time, you were required to be a neat and speedy writer.

This was the 7th written exam since I turned four years old, and I've won first place four times in a row. The first time I took the written test, I was ranked 24th, the second time 15th, and the third time 7th. I didn't have a good start.

It took me a while to figure out how the written exams worked, its logic, and its efficiency. Once I solved that, I haven't been overtaken, and I myself have been improving my certainty even more. The gap between me and the second-place finisher was widening with each written exam, and now the time gap was about ten minutes.

Regardless if I got a perfect score or first place, I would never be praised by anyone. When everyone finished, we moved on to the next part of the curriculum.

"Now we'll start Judo. Everyone please change and follow the instructor to another room."

Martial arts. This was another curriculum added when we turned four, as was the written test.

I've already been taught in Judo, Aikido, Karate, Kūdō, Taidō and Jujutsu for eight months. While being trained in the basics, we progressed to the stage where we had to fight in actual combat.

All the kids were crying and sobbing while being thrashed around.

"I can't… I can't stand up…!"

As if begging for forgiveness, Mikuru clung weakly to the instructor's leg.

"Still, get up!"

The girl was forced to stand up as the instructor forcibly shook off her hands, but her body seemed to be immobilized. The fact that's a girl wasn't taken into consideration here.

"I told you to stand up!"

The girl was kicked, spun around and around on the floor, and sprayed vomit all over the place. Of course, the adults weren't kicking seriously. Even so, it was obvious to everyone that the force of the kick was unbelievably strong.

"I don't give a damn, even if you're a kid! You already know that!"

The average mind would have a strong resistance to hurting a child this much. But the instructors who've been called to the White Room aren't ordinary. They were the kind of people who had no qualms about sending women and children to the brink of death.

"No one will cry if you disappear! Stand up and face them on your own!"

Mikuru, convulsing and unfocused, put her hands on the floor and tried to get up.

"Yes! That's it! Show some spirit!"

"Uh, uuh… Ugh… gh…!"

But the previous kick Mikuru took was critical, and she collapsed and lost consciousness.

"Damn! You gutless bastard! Get her out of here! Get out of my way!"

The instructor, who had been making irritating footsteps, shouted angrily as he forcibly removed Mikuru from the room.

Do you believe such a scene is tragic? If so, you should change how you think. This is only the beginning. Excessive reactions like Mikuru's were decreasing day by day, and even the expression of pain was fading away.

Even human instincts were eliminated by the brain as superfluous functions. It was natural to be thrown. It was natural to have difficulty breathing. It was natural to hurt yourself to the point of sobbing. And even thinking about it was a waste.

The only way out of the situation was to keep trying to reduce the number of times you get thrown within the time limit. Of course, the most ideal situation was to defeat your opponent. But the opponent was far superior in strength, size, and skill. Needless to say, it wasn't easy to bridge the gap between adults and children.

"Haa!" My vision shook and I felt a strong pain in my back. In the confrontation with the instructor, the children were always made to

taste this bitterness. I was no exception.

“Get up!”

The relentless slamming into the floor, making it impossible to breathe, didn’t allow you a break. If I didn't get up immediately, I would be reprimanded again and again. Next, arms that were many times thicker than mine flew at me.

I was slammed to the floor again, and I tried desperately to catch myself, but I couldn’t absorb the damage. While I was being knocked down to the ground, similar occurrences were happening all over the place.

"Hey, don't you hurt him!" cried Kasumi. She was the exception to my previous statement.

Every time I would get hurt, she would come running trying to protect me. But it would always end with her getting hurt by the instructor.

I was genuinely confused by her actions. Why should someone waste their own energy to protect someone else? It was illogical.

None the less, Kasumi tried and got the standard treatment.

After being forced to fight intensely and breathlessly, everyone rose to their feet, battered and bruised.

After an intense education from our instructors, we were obliged to take part in hand-to-hand combat with three others at the end of the day.

The children never look tired.I’ve learned that any prey that seems weak was doomed to be hunted by the strong.

While a fight between two students, Kasumi approached me.

"Are you okay?" she asked me.

I looked at her and thought about what should I answer. Conversations between students in white room wasn't banned but

nobody went out of their way to talk to somebody.

"Why are you asking me that? You got hit too. " I answered, this was the first time I had spoken to anyone other than the instructors.

"Yes, but I can take it."

"You think I can't?"

"No, it's not like that. Will you just answer my question." she said with frustration. It was rarity to see any emotions other than pain and suffering on the faces of students.

"I am okay." I said and moved towards the others. Next was my turn to fight.

Win or lose, we moved on to the next lesson as if nothing had happened.

Kouenji Rokusuke's Soliloquy -

Greek mythology deals abundantly with human frailty. Many of its tales involve hatred and jealousy.

Have you ever heard of “The Wings of Icarus”?

Allow me to summarize. Long ago, in ancient Greece, there lived a great inventor named Daedalus.

Daedalus was ordered by King Minos to build a great labyrinth in which to imprison the monstrous Minotaur.

However, King Minos soon abandoned Daedalus, confining the inventor to a tower alongside his son, Icarus.

In order to escape their prison, Daedalus gathered together the feathers of many birds in order to fashion a large pair of wings. He connected the larger feathers with thread, and the smaller with wax.

Once the wings were completed and the time had come to fly to freedom, Daedalus gave Icarus awarning.

He said, “If you fly too high, the sun will melt the wax holding the wings together. Be careful.”

With that warning in mind, Icarus leapt from the tower alongside his father. Together, they gained their freedom.

But freedom can be a dangerous thing, and can make a person lose sight of himself. With such boundless freedom before him, Icarus started to get carried away. Perhaps it was inevitable after breaking free from such painful restraints.

Icarus, blissful, forgot his father’s warning and flew higher and higher. The sun burned the false angel wings that his father had constructed, and in the blink of an eye, the wax melted.

Eventually, the false wings were completely burned away. Icarus fell into the sea and died. Was Icarus a brave young man who jumped into the sky to gain his freedom? Or was he an arrogant fool who overestimated his abilities and believed that he could reach the sun?

Perhaps no one save for his father, Daedalus, will ever know the answer to that.

For some reason, I think of Icarus’ wings when I stand before a mirror.

Considering what these past few months had brought, I could say that I made the comparison simply because I resembled Icarus.

But I immediately came to realize that the we were fundamentally different from one another. Icarus was arrogant and had overestimated his abilities.

On the other hand, I knew what I was capable of. I knew that I was better than everybody that surrounded me. But I was smart enough to acknowledge where my limits lay.

Since, I have been in this school. I didn't even try to contribute

towards my class. After all, those lowly creatures didn't deserve to be a witness to my superior abilities.

But I had been pushed into a corner. I had no choice but to do it. They know that I came here to escape from my regular life.

Here, nobody expects me to be the best in every field. Nobody bothers me with their instructions. All my life, they made me do what they wanted but here I could do whatever I want.

Here, I am not the heir to the Kouenji conglomerate. But an obstinate guy, who doesn't follow anybody.

But now, I have to do everything in my limit to prevent them from taking this three years away from me.

And the best way to secure myself was by allying myself with the demon himself.

I was surprised to see him here, although I didn't show it. I tried competing with him to test, if he was still the same as before.

I still remember the day when my whole family was invited to see the workings of the white room.

I had seen him through the glass window. Destroying several trained fighters without breaking a sweat.

Even though he acts like one of those goody two shoes. I knew what he really was.

With the help of the demon boy, I was confident that there wouldn't be anyone who could expel me.

If they want to come for me. Let them.

Let the games begin.

I can't express how excited, I am to begin volume 3.

The plans are drawn.

The setups are done.

Here we go.

Vol-3 Ch-1 The Cruise

Reads: 1104 | Votes: 50 | Comments: 14

The endless summer sea. The infinite blue skies. The perfectly clear air. Here, in the midst of the Pacific Ocean, we didn't feel the intense midsummer heat, and the gentle sea breeze kissed our bodies.

Yes, this really was an oceanic paradise.

"Whoa! This is the beeeeeeesssssst!" shouted Okitani, both hands raised high in the air. His voice echoed across the deck of the luxury liner.

The view from the "special seats" on the deck was exceptionally gorgeous.

The boys group had decided to hang out together, so here we are. Chilling under the sun.

I was wearing my shades with an unbuttoned Hawaiian shirt, which earned me a lot of looks from the fairer sex.

"This view is incredible! I'm honestly super moved right now!"

A group of girls led by Kei came out from the ship's cabin. Karuizawa pointed out to the expansive ocean, wearing a radiant smile.

"Seriously, the scenery here is just amazing!"

Kikyou was also present among the group of girls. It looked like the extraordinary view had stolen her breath away.

After overcoming numerous hardships, midterms, and the final exam, we had welcomed summer vacation with open arms. The Advanced Nurturing High School had arranged for an extravagant

three-week trip-a cruise on a luxury liner.

Although, for how long this vacation would last was debatable.

Due to the collective hard work of the class, we had gotten third place in class average. Barely, loosing to Class B for second place.

Without any previous years question paper to help. It was still an admirable result. From being in dead last in academics to nearly overtaking Class B was commendable.

Right now, the class points status was Class A leading with 1135 points, since they got first place in finals by a large margin earning them 100 points.

Followed by Class B, who got 95 points in the finals. So, there total stood at 735 points.

Our class had gained 90 points, so our new total was 585 points.

Finally, Class D got 85 points for coming in last place in the finals. Lifting their total to 260 points.

"I never dreamed that high schoolers could go on such a luxurious cruise. And it's for three whole weeks. Three weeks! When my mom and dad hear about this, they're gonna be so shocked!"

As Minami had stated, this was certainly no ordinary trip. At our government-sponsored school, there was absolutely no need for us to pay for tuition or other miscellaneous expenses-which, of course, included this trip. We received the best of special treatment.

The cruise liner and its facilities were of the highest possible quality. This ship was fully equipped with everything from prestigious restaurants to a theater, a fully equipped gym, planetarium, water slides and even an upscale spa.

On my own, this would probably have cost me about 100,000 yen, even in the off season.

Our trip, which promised the pinnacle of luxury, had started a week ago.

On the morning of 22nd July, at 5 am. We had boarded the buses and left the school campus for the first time since the month of April. We reached the Tokyo Bay in an hour, where we boarded this beauty.

Since then, students were permitted to move freely throughout the entire vessel. Best of all, we were able to use any of the ship's facilities free of charge. For those students who'd suffered daily due to a lack of points or don't like to spend their points at all, this ship was heaven-sent.

All of us were assigned cabins to sleep in, each of the cabins had 4 students. My cabin mates were Hirata, Kouenji and Yukimura.

The girls were allotted to the cabins on the upper levels. Whereas the boys got the lower levels.

According to the schedule, we would spend our second week staying at a fancy summer lodge on a deserted island. After that, we would enjoy the cruise ship for another week.

But I had an inkling that the desert island stay would be a lot different than we expect it to be.

The school owned a deserted island in the region of North Pacific. We were somewhere close to Hawaii. At least that's what the captain said when I had infiltrated the engine control room.

Although, it was a restricted area for the students, I had used my student council privilege to meet the captain of the ship.

"Where is Horikita? I haven't seen her for the last few days." asked Kikyou, as she and I had moved towards a more isolated place.

"I don't know, I am not her caretaker. Why are you asking?"

"You damn well know, why I am asking about her." she said with a glare.

"Don't worry about her Kikyou, she won't reveal your secrets. She doesn't even know if it was you. It's all under control."

"Still, it's too risky. We should just expel her."

"Kikyou, do you really think I would risk losing you or your secret. It wouldn't benefit me at all. So chill, if I decided that Horikita is a threat to my personal interests. She would be out of the school before she knows it."

Kikyou hesitantly accepted. I knew she wouldn't be satisfied until Horikita is out of the school but I am not going to sacrifice one of my knights to please my queen.

"What is the status of the other class leaders?"

"None of them expect anything to happen, Baldy will be leading Class A as the cripple wasn't able to come. Goody two shoes is leading Class B and there is not much information about Mr.Dictator."

"You have some interesting nicknames for the class leaders, you gave me one?" I asked lightheartedly.

"Yes, Emotionless Bitch."

"Okay, Two Faced Bitch."

She tried to kick me in the shin. But I dodged it and tripped her. She fell on me and I caught her.

"What is going on here? Is this a secret meeting? Oh! Are you actually dating but don't want anyone to know, so you are meeting in secret." shouted Mori. How is she always present at the right place and right time to tease me.

Due to her more of our classmates joined us. But Kikyou intervened before this got out of hand.

"Mori-san, you're misunderstanding the situation. I was asking Ayanokouji-kun about Horikita-san. We haven't seen her for days." she said in her usual voice, all of her hostility gone.

"Attention, students. Please assemble on the deck. You will be able to see the island soon. This is a good time to take in some rather

significant scenery."

The announcement grabbed everyone's attention.

The island appeared on the horizon a few minutes after several students had gathered. Ike who had just arrived with his friends, let out a gleeful cry.

Other students noticed, and began assembling on the deck. After a crowd had gathered, some particularly domineering boys showed up and began pushing us out of the way in order to get the best position.

"Hey, you're in the way. Move it, you defects."

One of the guy tried to intimidate me and tried shoving me. But he himself got pushed back by Sodou.

"What do you think, you are doing?"

Sodou hounded him. Seeing Sodou's pissed face, he backed off. But he still didn't leave.

"You do understand how this school is structured, right? Class D doesn't get any human rights. Defects like you are just that-defective-so you should submit. We're all in Class A over here."

"Do you have any brain cells, we are Class C. Learn the difference first." said Akito.

"But you were Class D. You guys are the original defects. You reached Class C by a fluke." the guy said.

"Your name is Yahiko Totsuka and your OAA rating is even worse than the OAA ratings of an average student in our class. You're basically carried by your superior classmates. I wouldn't take much pride in that." I replied.

Everyone from Class C were glaring at him, from the girls to even the idiot company.

The whole of Class C was standing united against him. It was truly a

sight to see.

Unable to come up with an argument, he left to join his other classmates.

A little while later, the crowd started getting riled up and making noise. The students' enthusiasm increased by leaps and bounds as we sailed closer and the island became clearer.

I'd thought that the ship would have gone directly to the island, but for some reason we passed the pier and started circling around.

The island, had a surface area of about 0.5 square kilometers. The highest point of the island reached 230 meters.

In comparison to Japan's total area, the island was tiny, but when seen by one hundred-odd people on a cruise ship, it looked unbelievably massive.

Eventually, the boat made a complete pass around the island. The ship continued to circle without changing speed, barely making a splash as it moved almost unnaturally fast through the water.

"Guys, I think we should go back to our rooms and get ready for deboarding." suggested Hirata.

Most of the class went back to their rooms. But I stayed back and stopped Kikyou from leaving as well, we were taking in the scenery. I also saw Katsuragi from Class A do the same.

The first ones to return were Ike, Yamauchi and Sodou.

"I've decided, Haruki. I...will confess my feelings to Kushida-chan on this trip!" Ike proclaimed in a low voice.

Kikyou had moved away from me to not cause any problems with the idiots.

"A-are you serious? If she rejects you, it's gonna be crazy awkward, though. You gonna be okay?" Yamauchi said.

"This is just my own selfish reasoning. Kushida-chan is really cute,

right? That's why most of the boys want to ask her out. But she's just on a whole other level, so no one can get the courage to confess to her. That means she's not used to being confessed to, right? I think Kushida-chan's heart could be shaken by my declaration of love. It's like, you know, not entirely hopeless."

Yeah right, at this point I could have stopped him but I just wanted some good entertainment.

"I see. So, you've already made up your mind."

"Yeah!"

Normally Yamauchi would have gotten fired up and opposed Ike, but this time he didn't. Instead, he looked out over the deck as if searching for something.

"What's the matter?" Ike asked.

"Ah, nothing really,"

Yamauchi responded absent-mindedly. In theend, he never brought up the subject of Kushida.

"Hey, hey, Kushida-chan. Can I talk to you for a minute?" Ike asked.

"Hmm? What is it?"

Ike immediately approached Kushida, who had been looking at the sea. This was obviously a suspicious move.

"So, it's like this... It's been about four months since we met, right? So...I was wondering if it might be okay for me to call you by your first name now. I mean, it makes me feel like we're strangers when I call you by your last name."

Wow, what a let down. It would have been funny to see how Kikyou would have responded if Ike really had confessed to her. Now, my day is ruined.

"Come to think of it, I guess you and Yamauchi have been calling each other by your first names for a while now, huh?" Kushida said.

"So... I can't, huh? C-call you Kikyou-chan, I mean?"

In response to Ike's inquiry, Kushida simply smiled. Yep, she is thinking of ways to kill him.

"Of course it's okay for you to call me that. Should I call you Kanji-kun, then?"

"Whoooooaaaaa! Kikyou-chaaaaaaan!" Ike cried out and posed like he was reaching out to heaven, kind of like the guy on the poster for the movie Platoon.

Kushida chuckled. Oh, I can literally feel her inner cursing. We are telepathically connected.

"First names, huh? Hey, speaking of, I wonder what Horikita's first name is? Huh?" Sudou asked me as if I was the one who'd know.

"Really? Horikita? Onodera has a crush on you. I literally put you in the same group as her, so you could spend some time with her at the amusement park."

"I know and I think Onodera is a really good friend but Horikita is just, you know more beautiful."

Nah, he's just biased.

"But how did you even like Horikita? Have you seen her attitude." I asked.

"She's not that bad. I think you wouldn't know this but whenever anyone else teaches me everything goes above my head but whenever Horikita is teaching me, everything just makes sense. It's the reason I got better grades in finals than mid terms."

Horikita is teaching Sodou without notifying me? Why? Is she actually trying to help Sodou or does she have some other motives.

"Hey, would you just tell me her first name? Come on man. Help me out here!"

"Manabu. Horikita Manabu."

"Manabu, huh? That's a cute name. Just like I'd expect. It feels perfect for her. Although, why do I feel like I have heard it before?"

"Maybe Chabashira-sensei called Horikita with that name in the class. Or else where? Are you saying that Horikita's name is just a common name that everybody has? Are you saying she is not unique?"

"No! No! It is a rare beautiful name."

Yep, call her that you simp. I would like to see Horikita's reaction to it.

He doesn't even remember the name of student council president. Although, he only heard it once during the club festival.

This idiot didn't even think about using the OAA app to check Horikita's name, so he deserves what's coming his way.

I mean just the level of simp this guy, even if Horikita's first name were Adolf or Joseph or whatever, he probably would have felt it was perfect.

"I'm going to call her by her first name during our summer vacation, too. Manabu. Manabu..."

You know what would be more entertaining, if Manabu is present during this conversation between Sodou and Horikita.

"Oh, hey. Let me practice with you, Ayanokouji. Practice saying Manabu's name, I mean."

Okay, now you are just being weird. I am the class representative, have some respect.

"Practice? What do you mean, practice? That's not a normal thing to do."

Moreover, it was pointless to practice saying someone's name unless you were saying it to the person in question. Sudou glared at me intently. He wasn't planning to make me his imaginary Horikita, was he? It was probably because he was imagining me as someone

of the opposite sex, but the look in his eyes really creeped me out. In my mind, I started breathing heavily.

"Hey, Horikita, do you have a minute? There's something I want totalk to you about..." Sudou murmured.

"I'm not Horikita."

Disgusted, I averted my eyes.

"Come on! Help a brother out. It's just practice! I don't wanna do it, either, but I gotto practice, you know? It's like I have to practice basketball if I want to get good. In either case, I need to take my shot."

I saw Kikyou watching the whole scene with interest. That sly fox, she is taking revenge. I could literally feel her laughing at my situation. I told you, we're connected.

I really didn't want to listen to this, but I didn't have much of a choice. I can't just leave Sodou's development half way, my plans regarding him would be ruined if I pushed him away. I had to grin and bear it.

"Horikita. Isn't it weird that we talk to each other like we're strangers? We've known each other for a while now. Other people are calling each other by their first names. Isn't it time we did, too?"

"....."

I wanted to hit Sudou on the head, but I tried to endure it like an adult.

"Say something! Why aren't you practicing?!"

"What do you want me to say?"

"Answer like how Horikita would. You've known her for a long time, she sits beside you in class, so you'd know how she'd answer, right?"

We had only known each other for four months, so I wouldn't

necessarily know that.

Even so, Sudou had asked me to play his imaginary Horikita.

Kikyou was red from trying to control her laughter. Oh, just you wait. I will have my revenge.

I had enough with Sudou, it was time to make him realize that I am his leader. Plans be damned! I clenched my fist in a threatening manner.

"I'm one step ahead on the path to adulthood. You want me to practice this with you instead of Horikita? Feel free to practice by yourself." I said and left.

Ike jumped in to substitute for me instead. Sudou seemed kind of weird when he started talking.

"Horikita...is it okay for me to call you by your first name now?"

"Huh? Well, you're not exactly a hottie, are you, Sudou-kun? And you don't seem to have any brain, so, like, you're not my type at all, are you? Or it's, like, sorry, sorry, but no thanks, you know?!"

Despite looking nothing like one, Ike was trying to play the part of a gyaru high school girl. Sudou put him in a chokehold until he writhed in agony on the deck.

That was the last thing I saw before I left for my room.

An announcement came over the PA speakers. "We will disembark in thirty minutes. Please assemble on the deck. All students should have changed into their jerseys. Make sure to check your designated bag and your luggage, and do not forget your cell phone. Please keep all other personal items in your room. There is a possibility that you will not be able to visit the bathroom for some time, so please do so now."

I was packing the necessities items required for the week stay on the island. But apparently personal items were not allowed.

I put on the jersey that I used for gym class, returned to the ship's

deck, and waited until we reached the island. As the island drew closer and closer, the first-years' enthusiasm reached its peak.

"We will disembark now, beginning with the students from Class A. Cell phones are prohibited on the island. Please hand your phone to your homeroom teacher as you leave."

No cell phones either!

Following the loudspeaker's command, the students went down the stairs in an orderly fashion.

"Come on. Hurry up! Even though we're wearing thin clothes, we're all sweating!"

There was no place to hide from the sun on the ship's deck. No surprise that people were complaining. The Class C students waited on standby in the heat.

Horikita 'Manabu' finally joined us. At first glance, it didn't appear as though anything had changed, but there was a slight difference-something felt out of place. Even Horikita, normally so meticulous, was concerned about her appearance.

Right now, though, her hair was disheveled. She seemed a bit cold, unconsciously rubbing her arms as we waited to disembark and set foot on the island.

"What were you doing until now?" I asked.

"I was just reading a book in my room. For Whom the Bell Tolls. You wouldn't know it."

Hey, I am in a book club!

That book was arguably one of Ernest Hemingway's definitive works, an unquestioned masterpiece. I'd long been impressed by Horikita's hobby of reading such acclaimed books.

But I had to wonder what her priorities were, since she was reading while on a luxurious cruise. In such a case, I found it a little suspicious that she would shut herself off in her room to read. She

wasn't saying anything, and it would be silly to investigate further. Best just to drop it.

"I'm anxious about what's coming, but since we're prohibited from bringing personal items along there's nothing I can really do," she grumbled, seemingly dissatisfied.

Unusual for someone headed to the beach to say. Disembarking took longer than I thought it would, probably because the teachers guarded the students on both sides as they got off the ship and checked their luggage.

"Hey. Does it seem like they're being strangely cautious right now? On their guard? I mean, they didn't even confiscate our cell phones during the final. They're really cracking down on the personal items. Could it be....."

Horikita looked at me knowingly, she remembered my warning that I gave in the restaurant.

"It certainly seems that way. I mean, if we're just playing in the ocean, I can't imagine they'd need to go this far."

Speaking of unnatural, there was a helicopter parked on the stern of the boat. While my theory was looking more and more solid, I could also be overthinking it.

If students did bring their cell phones to the beach, someone's phone might get wet and break. And maybe they didn't want personal items because they were worried about people polluting the beach with garbage. And if someone suddenly got ill, the helicopter was there for dispatch, right? Right?

Soon, it would be our turn to be examined and get off the ramp. I had yet to realize that this place was going to be the boundary between heaven and hell.

But hell for me or my enemies, that would be decided in a few days.

Here we are, the beginning of the first special test. What's your

predictions?

Comment on what do you think will be the results in terms of how many points will each class have by the end.

From now on the updates would be slower for a month. Maybe two per weeks.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-3 Ch-2 The Surprise

Reads: 1013 | Votes: 42 | Comments: 7

As we got off the boat, chatting amiably with one another, our homeroom teacher greeted us.

"I will now start roll call for Class C. When you hear your name, please respond loud and clear."

Our homeroom teacher started taking attendance, clipboard in hand, while simultaneously instructing us to form a line.

Chabashira-sensei wore the same kind of jersey as her students. This atmosphere was more akin to a training camp than summer vacation. Still, not many of the students seemed tense at all.

"Oh, come on! I want my free time already! The sea is right in front of me!" complained a Class D student, standing behind our class line.

I saw Ryūen looking at the happenings suspiciously. I waved at him with a grin. In return, he gave me the finger.

Most of the students wanted to run off onto the sandy beach. Soon enough, a tall teacher stepped onto a prepared white platform.

It was Mashima-sensei, Class A's homeroom teacher. He normally taught English, and was well-known for having a stubborn disposition. At first glance, he could easily be mistaken for one of those bodybuilder types. He was built like a professional wrestler, but was actually quite intelligent. He'd even taught special courses in the past.

"First, I would like to say that I'm happy you've arrived safely. However, it's unfortunate that one of you was unable to participate due to illness."

My condolences to Sakayanagi. It would have been more fun if she was here.

"Oh wow, someone couldn't come on the trip because he was sick? Poor guy," said Ike quietly, so the teachers wouldn't hear.

He certainly had a point. If this were some kind of extravagant summer trip, that'd be one thing, but the first special test was another story altogether. I wondered if that she would regret not coming after hearing me talk about it.

Even in her disability, I think she should've pushed herself and participated.

While Mashima-sensei surveyed the students in silence, I could see that adults in uniform had started setting up some kind of special tent nearby. I also saw a computer and other equipment on a long table. This increasingly business-like setup didn't match the natural splendor around us at all, and many of the students looked perplexed.

Mashima-sensei uttered a few cruel words, as if waiting for the atmosphere to change. "Well then. We shall commence the current academic year's first special test."

Bingo! Finally, what I was waiting for.

"Huh? Special test? What do you mean?"

Almost everyone in all the classes asked some variation on that question. They'd all thought this was just a class trip, only to be hit by this surprise attack. Although, I was proud to see that the members of Class C were calm and composed.

Our summer vacation was a product of the school's good will, but that had been an illusion. They plummeted from relief into stark tension.

"The test commences today, that is 29th July from 12 pm and lasts for one week, concluding on August 5th at 12 pm. This test will determine if you can live on a deserted island together as a group. In addition, I should warn you that this special test is both practical

and realistic, designed based on real-world corporate training."

"Living on a deserted island. Does that mean we're not staying on the boat, but the island?"

Some students from Class B and D voiced their obvious concerns.

"You are correct. During the test, you will not be allowed to board the ship without a suitably justifiable reason. It will be necessary for you to fend for yourselves on this island while you are here, from creating a place to sleep to preparing food to eat. Once the test starts, each class will receive two tents, and two flashlights. You will be provided with one box of matches. There is no limit to the amount of sunscreen you can have. Each student will be provided with one toothbrush. As a special case, girls will be allowed to have as many feminine sanitary products as they'd like, without any restrictions. Please ask your respective homeroom teachers for those. That is all."

With that, the teachers began distributing the items.

"Huh?! So we have to live like survivors on a deserted island?! I don't want to hear this kind of insanity! This isn't an anime or a manga or something! We can't all sleep together in just two tents! And what are we supposed to do about food in the first place? This is unbelievable!"

Yamauchi fussed loud enough for everyone to hear. I guess he had prepared his mind for a test but not of this kind.

Developing skills of self sufficiency on a deserted island-hunting wild animals, washing in the river, building bedding from tree branches-it certainly was like something you'd see in a movie or read about in a book.

No one could've imagined that the school would put us through a test like this. Mashima-sensei gave no sign that this was some kind of joke. If anything, he appeared surprised by what Yamauchi had said.

"You may say this is unbelievable, but that's because you've lived a

short, superficial life. There is an actual, prominent company that hold straining sessions on uninhabited islands."

"Huh? B-but this...this isn't special at all. Is it? Isn't it too much to ask for us to start living on a deserted island with no warning? No way! This is unreal!" some students from Class D came in Yamauchi's support.

"Keeping on like that would be shameful, so stop talking. What Mashima-sensei just said is only part of it. There are many companies in the world with many different training activities. There are workplaces where there aren't any chairs in the office, and companies that decide salaries with dice rolls. The world is wider and deeper than you even know." Chabashira-sensei, as if unable to overlook students running their mouth, chided them.

She continued, "In other words, you are ill-equipped to distinguish between what is reality and what isn't."

Many of the students appeared unconvinced and wore dissatisfied looks.

"I assume you're all thinking something like, 'What does this test mean?' Or perhaps some of you doubt the existence of such training programs. However, students who remain at such a base level of thought are unlikely to become anyone promising in the future. What is your basis for determining this to be 'unbelievable' or 'ridiculous'? You're just students. In my opinion, you're all equally worthless. What kind of insignificant person determines that they can criticize a leading company? That's bizarre. Were you a president in charge of one such notable business, then you might have some right to deny our claims. However, there shouldn't be any grounds for someone of your station to be able to do that." Mashima-sensei joined Chabashira-sensei to chide the students.

As we listened, we did certainly determine that parts sounded unreasonable or unrealistic. But, just like Mashima-sensei said, we had no basis to oppose their claims. Those who found this beyond the realm of their understanding could call it "bizarre" or "unbelievable," but for someone who did understand the point, well, it would be absurd to think otherwise.

"But, teacher, isn't this supposed to be our summer vacation? We were brought here under the pretext of going on a relaxing trip. Don't you think that bringing us here and then springing this corporate training on us could be considered unfair?" Ichinose protested this time.

"I see. I suppose that you're not wrong about that. I can understand why you would be discontented." Mashima-sensei's response showed that he recognized the soundness of such an argument, unlike Yamauchi's complaints.

There were students who were dissatisfied with the current situation, and those who were dissatisfied with the process as a whole.

"However, please do not worry. It would make sense for you to have complaints if you were being forced into a harsh situation. However, even though we're calling it a special test, there's no need to think about it in such unhappy terms. In the coming week, you can go swimming, or hold a barbecue. It wouldn't be a bad time for you to occasionally have a campfire and chat with friends, either. The theme of this special exam is 'freedom',after all."

"Huh? Huh? The theme is freedom? We can have a barbecue? Hmm? And this is still called a test? I'm so confused..."

Even though this was a test, we were free to play. The contradiction confused the students, and there doubts only increased.

"As a major part of this special test, we've decided to distribute 300 points to each class. By using your points well, you might be able to enjoy this week's special test just as you would a normal trip. We've also prepared a manual just for that purpose."

Mashima-sensei received a booklet that looked to be a few dozen pages thick from another teacher.

"This manual lists all of the ways you can obtain points. It also explains where to get drinking water and food, as well as essential necessities. If you wanted to have a barbecue, it explains how to prepare the equipment and ingredients. We also have numerous

tools for you to be able to enjoy playing in the ocean to the fullest."

Gradually, the students' grim expressions grew calmer.

"So, we can do whatever we want with the 300 points?" I asked, already a rough plan had been formed in my mind.

"That's right. It's possible to arrange for anything using your points. Of course, it's necessary for you to use them in a systematic way, but with a solid plan, you can spend your week without any difficulties."

If we could really get through the week by using the points we had, then this would be more like a vacation than a test. It might end up feeling like a real summer vacation.

"B-but, teacher. You said this was a test, right? So shouldn't there be some kind of difficulty to it?" asked Ichinose.

"No, there's nothing difficult. It won't even have any adverse effects on your second semester. I guarantee it."

"So it's really okay for us to just have fun for one week?"

"That's right. You're all free to do what you want. Of course, there are some bare minimum rules that you need to abide by as a group, but there shouldn't be anything difficult about that."

If that were true, then did that mean there really was no risk? In that case, we should ask if he could explain the purpose of this test. Was it linked to some kind of exchange between grade levels? I couldn't grasp the school's true intentions, but Mashima-sensei's next statement clarified everything.

"When this special test period is over, each class' remaining points will be added to their total class points. Your point totals will reflect this change in the amount of allowance you will receive in the month of August."

As he spoke, a gust of wind blew across the beach and kicked up a cloud of dust.

There comes the lovely catch. I was almost dissapointed by this test, but now it's starting to sound interesting.

Mashima-sensei's words were the greatest shock of the day for the students. In previous examinations, they'd measured things like our academic abilities. Naturally, this was advantageous for students with a fundamentally high level of academic ability. Class A and Class B had clear advantages. Each time, we in Class C were forced into situations where we'd lose class points.

However, the rules were completely different this time. This test was designed in a way that didn't create too much of a gap between Classes A and D.

"So if we can endure this for one week, then starting next month we could see a huge increase in our allowance?!" Ike asked.

"That's right... This isn't a competition to test our scholarly abilities, but our endurance. If we managed to curb our basic desires, we might get closer to being the top class." said Hirata.

"Each class will receive one copy of the manual. If the manual is lost, you may have another copy. However, it will consume points, so please be very careful. Also, the student who was marked absent from this trip was from Class A. According to the rules of this special test, should any student have to leave due to illness, there will be a thirty-point penalty to the class as a whole. Therefore, Class A will be starting with 270 points."

Even though it didn't affect our class, the penalty was still merciless. The students from Class A were visibly trembling. The other classes also appeared shocked.

As soon as Mashima-sensei had finished speaking, he told us to disperse. Another teacher's voice came over the loud speaker, telling us that each class would receive supplementary instructions from our respective homeroom teachers.

We then gathered around Chabashira-sensei. The four classes had congregated in order to keep some distance from each other.

"Thirty thousand more points next month, thirty thousand more points next month, thirty thousand more points next month. Let's do it!" Ike and the others struck victorious poses.

The girls happily discussed what things they would buy. Class C's dearest wish was to increase our points so that even after the 50 percent points that go to the class account, they would still have a lot of points left.

They just had to spend one week without any luxuries. It certainly sounded simple.

"I will now hand out wrist watches to every one of you. You are not to take them off until the end of the test. If you remove your wristwatch without permission, you will be punished. This watch doesn't just tell time. Its sensors also check your body temperature, your pulse, and even your movements. It's equipped with a GPS. Also, in the off chance something bad does happen, this watch comes equipped with the means to notify the school. If you find yourself in an emergency situation, please do not hesitate to push that button."

The vendor who supplied the watches had stacked them next to Chabashira-sensei. The time had come for Class C to collect our supplies. We were instructed to take the watches out of their boxes and put them on.

"When you say an emergency, do you mean, like, if a bear shows up?" I asked lightheartedly.

"Even if that was a joke, the test has already begun. I cannot answer any questions that might possibly influence your results."

"Uh...that's a kinda freaky answer." Shinohara said.

"I don't think there are any wild animals here. If one of the students were injured, that would be a big problem. They probably gave us these watches solely to manage our well-being. Don't you agree? We're on an uninhabited island, after all, and the school has to ensure our safety," Hirata replied.

Indeed, the school had gifted us these watches to keep us safe. If we were roaming freely about the island, the teachers wouldn't be able to monitor our condition with their eyes alone. Plus, it would be difficult to install cameras here, like inside of the school.

They most likely intended to monitor our physical condition so they could respond to any unforeseen circumstances. The helicopter back on the ship was probably there in case of just such an emergency. As people received their watches, they placed them on either their right or left arm, according to their preferences.

"Is it okay for us to get in the water wearing these?"

"There shouldn't be any problem. They're waterproof. However, should they malfunction, immediately report to a test administrator and exchange it for a replacement."

This special test was somewhat eccentric in its design, so it likely wasn't the first time that the school had run it. Clearly, they had planned for various situations. However, there might have been some oversights.

"Chabashira-sensei. I understand that we're going to be spending one week on this island, but is it possible to get by without using any points?" Hirata asked.

"Hmm. Well, the school isn't involved in the test process at all. That means that you must prepare your own food and water. Thinking of solutions to resolve the issue is part of the test. I don't know of any way of doing so without points."

The girls looked visibly more perplexed than the boys. The fact that a bed wasn't guaranteed probably made them feel uneasy.

"Don't worry. If we can catch fish and pick fruit in the forest, then we'll be fine. We can also use leaves and trees to make tents and stuff. And even if you start not feeling great, do your best!" Ike said, seemingly without any worry at all.

He was determined to preserve the 300 points. Even if Ike would be fine living like that, our class comprised of forty students. Obtaining

what everyone needed probably wouldn't be that easy.

"I'm sorry, Ike, but I don't think things will go as you've planned. Open your manual."

The class looked at me. I had already opened the manual as soon as I got it and started reading each and every word carefully. Clearly, the key to this examination was in this.

"First, I'd like you to read the last page, where the penalties are listed. This is very important information that encapsulates the difficulties of this special test. It will determine whether you live or die."

A bit too dramatic. On the last page, a line read-

•These penalties will be applied to anyone who falls under the following conditions."

~Anyone deemed unable to continue the test due to significant deterioration in health or serious injury will be penalized by thirty points.That student will then retire.

~In the event a student has polluted the environment, he or she will be penalized twenty points.

~In the event students are absent during the 8 AM or 8 PM roll call, five points will be taken for each student absent.

~In the event a student is found guilty of an act of violence toward another class, robbing another class, or causing damage to another class' property, etc., the offending student's class will immediately be disqualified, and the individual will forfeit all of his or her private points.

It looked like Class A was subject to these same penalties. The fourth rule was totally reasonable, written to prevent students from engaging in harmful behavior, while the other three rules were clearly there so individual students wouldn't behave carelessly.

Because we had roll call in the morning and at night, it was impossible to sleep your time away at camp. It was also meant to suppress rather barbaric behavior, like a student littering everywhere.

Essentially, it was a contest of restraint.

This is the first part of the rules, the major changes in the rules (yes, there are some changes) would be in the next chapter.

Not much to say, this chapter could be a little boring but I promise, it will get better. I had to rush this one.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-3 Ch-3 The Rules

Reads: 903 | Votes: 42 | Comments: 5

"You are free to behave as you wish. However, if ten students fall into poor health, then all your efforts will be for nothing. Once a student has retired from the test, he or she cannot come back."

The students who had thought it possible to get through the test by relying on their own endurance now looked perplexed. It would be impossible not to spend a single point, but that was true of every class.

However, whether you actively participated or resigned yourself to your fate in this test, endurance alone would not win the day here. Gradually, the shape of this very literal "special test" became clearer.

"In other words, using at least some points is unavoidable?" asked Shinohara, who'd been following along in the conversation.

"I disagree with the idea of compromising right away. I think that we ought to persevere for as long as we can." argued Yukimura.

"I understand how you feel, but it'll be bad if our health suffers." Hirata joined.

"Come on, Hirata, don't be so discouraging! This is a test of our patience, right?"

The more they understood the rules, the less they could agree on a course of action. There opinions were divided.

At any rate, there were a wide variety of items for purchase in the manual: essential equipment for surviving, like tents and cookware; machines and tools, like digital cameras and wireless transceivers/ walkie-talkies; items for amusement, like umbrellas, floaties, stuff for a barbecue, and fireworks; and food and water, the bare

essentials.

We could prepare for anything with our points. Apparently anyone could request something, and just report to their homeroom teacher in order to use points to purchase it.

"First things first, nobody other than me will try to buy anything. If you want to buy anything, talk to me about it." I said.

All of my classmates nodded at the declaration.

"Chabashira-sensei, can I ask you something? In the event that someone were to retire after we had already used all 300 points, what would happen?" asked Horikita, her hand raised.

"In that case, all that would increase is the number of people forced to retire. Your points can't be changed any more after reaching zero."

"So, in other words, we can't get into negative points during the test?"

Chabashira-sensei answered in the affirmative. Mashima-sensei had said that there wouldn't be any negative effects from this test. It looked like that was true. Chabashira-sensei continued talking, occasionally glancing at her wristwatch to check the time.

"Each one of the supplied tents is large enough to accommodate eight people. The tents weigh close to fifteen kilos, so please be careful when carrying them. Also, the school will not step in to help should your supplied items become lost or damaged. In the event that you need a new tent, remember to use your points."

"May I ask something? Where will roll call be held?" asked Chiaki.

"Each class will be accompanied by their respective homeroom teachers until the test is over. If you've decided where you want your base camp to be, report it. Once the base is set up, I will hold roll call there. Make sure that you think long and hard about it, because you can't change your base camp location without a justifiable reason once you've decided. The other classes are subject to the same conditions. There are no exceptions."

Did that mean that Chabashira-sensei was going to spend a week together with Class C, as our supervisor? Of course, she probably wasn't going to help us.

"Hey, teacher. I'm sorry to interrupt you when you're talking, but that juice from earlier went right through me. Where's the toilet?"

Sudou appeared before us, like he hadn't heard the announcement.

"The toilet, huh? I was about to get to that point. If you want to use the bathroom, use this."

Chabashira-sensei grabbed one of the cardboard boxes from the stacked pile. She peeled off the packing tape and took out some collapsed cardboard.

"Huh? What's that?" Sudou asked.

"It's a basic toilet. Each class will be supplied with one. Please handle it carefully."

Sudou wasn't the only one perplexed by this. The girls were shocked.

"Don't tell me we have to use that?!" Shinohara, raised her voice in horrified surprise. She is rather talkative today.

"Both the boys and girls will use it. But do not worry, it comes with a single button tent that you can use when you want to change. That way, no one will be able to see you."

"That's not the problem here! Th-that's just a freaking cardboard box! This is absolutely impossible!"

"It might be a cardboard box, but it's an especially well-made one. It can even be used in a disaster. I'll show you how to use it, so please commit this to memory."

Did anyone tell Sae, that she could have a career in sales. She was an absolutely amazing saleswoman, her looks would help too.

While the girls booed her, apparently not appreciating her talents.

Chabashira-sensei assembled the toilet. It seemed she was familiar with setting it up. Then she put a blue vinyl bag on it, and placed what looked to be a white sheet inside.

"This sheet is made of water-absorbing polymer. It covers and solidifies waste. It'll make the waste invisible, and also suppress the smell. After you finish using it, stack another sheet on top. By repeating this process, it's possible to get around five uses with one vinyl bag. These vinylbags and sheets will be supplied to you in unlimited amounts. You can even change them after every use, if you want."

"There's just no way I can do this! Absolutely no way!" Starting with Shinohara, nearly all of the girls rejected the idea.

Ike, who'd been silent, pouted and said, "Come on, just deal with it. This isn't the time to fight, Shinohara."

"Don't screw around! It probably doesn't matter to you boys. There's no way I can go to the bathroom in a cardboard box."

The arguments where beginning. The United class that I had been proud of, was breaking down due to a toilet.

"The decision is yours. However, you are not permitted to relieve yourselves in the forest, the sea, or rivers. Do not forget that."

"But, but I definitely can't do it in a cardboard box! Besides, the guys are going to be close, right? That's gross!" Shinohara, still unaccepting of the situation, directed her anger at the idiot company, especially Ike.

I guess, when put under the pressure. The brittle bonds formed between the class was supposed to break.

"What the heck? I don't get why you're treating us like perverts," Ike said.

"I am not saying that all the boys are perverts, only your friend group. It's true though, isn't it? You do seem to be really perverted."

"Huh? Jeez, that hurts! I'm a super gentleman!"

"Don't make me laugh. A gentleman? Get real. You're by far the top contender for biggest pervert amongst your friend group."

Sparks flew as Ike and Shinohara got into a heated argument.

"Anyway, it's impossible for me," she said.

Shinohara and half of the girls seemed like unwilling to listen to reason.

"Well then, what are you going to do? It'd be impossible for you to not use the bathroom for one whole week, right?"

"That's-"

Sae, who had calmly watched Ike and Shinohara argue like it wasn't her problem, suddenly looked behind us with a disgusted expression.

"Yoo-hoo!"

We heard a piercing voice. Its owner rushed at her target, capturing our homeroom teacher and hugging her tightly from behind. I would be lying if I said that I wasn't turned on by the view.

"What are you doing?" Chabashira-sensei grunted.

"What, I can't be friendly? I honestly wanted to see what you'd do," said Hoshinomiya-sensei, Class B's homeroom instructor.

She gently caressed Chabashira-sensei's arms.

"Whenever I touch your hair, Sae-chan, it's always so smooth!"

"Don't you understand the school's rules at all? Eavesdropping on other classes when they are giving information is inexcusable."

"Aw, I'm just an unimportant teacher, though. Even if I did hear something, I'd never tell. But doesn't this feel like fate? I can't believe that we both came to this island together."

Fate?

Chabashira-sensei ignored the hidden meaning in Hoshinomiya-sensei's words.

"Shut up. Just hurry on back to Class B."

"Ah! Isn't that Ayanokouji-kun? It's been so long!"

Unlike the other teachers, who occasionally popped into class, I didn't normally get many opportunities to interact with Hoshinomiya-sensei. I was still looking at the manual, but I gave her a slight wave without even looking at her.

"Summer is the season of love. If you want to confess your feelings to a girl you like, perhaps it'd be more effective while standing before the beautiful ocean?"

At this, several girls got interested and looked at me with anticipation, as if I would actually confess to them right now.

"The ocean may be beautiful, but I can't afford to do that during a special test. I have my responsibilities as the leader."

Tears started streaming down her cheeks. Since everyone was staring at us, I really wished she'd disentangle herself from my romantic life.

"You need to be more carefree!"

"Hey. Should I report you to the school authorities for behavioral problems? Besides, I don't have any more time." Chabashira-sensei said.

"Ooh, don't glare at me like that. Fine, fine, I get it. See you later!" Hoshinomiya-sensei walked away with a sad look on her face.

Chabashira-sensei immediately started on a new topic.

"Well then, allow me to explain some additional rules."

"A-additional rules? There's more?"

"Ayanokouji, I see you have already read those."

I nodded. They were by far the most important part of the special exam.

Rules for acquiring Bonus Points -

• Spot Occupation -

~ There are 20 designated spots on the island.

~ In these spots, there is right of exclusive possession, and only the class that occupies that spot may exercise those rights. The class that obtains those rights is entirely free to determine how they wish to exercise them.

~ Rights of exclusive possession are only valid for a period of eight hours after being invoked, after which they are automatically revoked. Another class can acquire those rights at that time.

~ The class gains one bonus point on occupying a spot once.

~ This point is provisional, and cannot be used during the testing period. Therefore, bonus points are calculated and added to your total after the test has ended.

~ There is some an apparatus installed near each spot, which shows the rights of exclusive possession.

~ A specialized key card is required to occupy a spot.

~ The Class will receive a fifty-point penalty if it uses a spot occupied by another class without permission.

~ Only a designated leader can use the key card.

~ It is impossible to change the leader without suitable justification.

• Leaders Guessing

~ On the seventh day, the last day of the test, the class have the

right to guess at the identity of the other class' leader during roll call.

~ If the guess is correct, then the class would obtain fifty points for each correct guess.

~ Conversely, the class whose leader is guessed correctly, would have to pay fifty points as compensation.

~ If the guess is incorrect, then the class would suffer a fifty-point penalty for being incorrect for each incorrect guess.

~ Conversely, the class whose leader is guessed incorrectly, would gain fifty points as a bonus.

~ A class whose leader has been guessed correctly would lose all of the bonus points they'd saved up until then.

• Reward for the designated Class Leader-
The Leader of the Class who has the highest total of points at the end of the exam. Receives the title of MVP and reward of 1 Million private points.

The last rule surprised many. I could literally see them wanting to become the leader.

"One person must be chosen as the leader, no exceptions. However, you are free not to participate. Please tell me once you've selected someone. At that time, I will provide you with a key card stamped with the leader's name. You have until roll call today. In the event that you do not decide by then, we will decide for you. That is all." Chabashira-sensei said.

In other words, the leader's identity would be discovered if you only managed to glance at the card. With that, Chabashira-sensei seemingly finished with her explanation. The die was cast.

Hirata immediately started taking action.

"We'll have time later to think about who should be the leader.

First, where will our base camp be? Do we camp somewhere around here, on the beach? Or do we go into the forest? We need to think carefully about our spot."

He said as he looked at me, waiting for my decision.

The manual included a simple map of the island, with only its size and the shape drawn. Things like the total area of the forest and the topography were completely unknown. It was more like a blank sheet of paper.

It looks like we need to fill in the necessary parts ourselves. A ballpoint pen had been given to us as well, for that exact purpose.

"It's good to have a spot near the boat where lots of teachers are, right?" said Onizuka.

"No, I'm not too sure. There may not be anything here." Yukimura countered.

"If there was no water, then there was no food. Building a base in this location could possibly mean being as far away as possible from convenient resources. On top of that, the sunlight would be intense during the day, making the environment harsh. On the other hand, there would also be risks if we went too far into the forest." he continued.

Shinohara and the others observed the situation while huddled tightly together. Chabashira-sensei retreated.

She probably meant to imply, "I'm not getting involved anymore. Do whatever you want. It's your headache Ayanokouji."

"Hey, Ayanokouji-kun. Isn't it better to decide ahead of time what we should do about the toilet?"

The toilet was definitely going to become an issue before long. The girls' opinions were reasonable.

"Well, we can talk about a decision, but in the end don't we just have to grin and bear it?" Ike said.

"No, there could be another way." I said.

I held up the manual and showed it to them.

"It says that temporary toilets can be purchased and installed using our points."

Shinohara and the other immediately gathered around the manual. The functions of the temporary toilets appeared impeccable. The reference pictures made it look like a flushable toilet you'd see at home. If that were the case, then the girls would be well on board with it.

However, the problem was that we needed to spend ten points per toilet. It was difficult to judge whether that was expensive or cheap.

"We absolutely need it! I mean, I really don't like that we have to spend points... But if we don't, it's just impossible!"

A lot of girls, triggered by Shinohara's remarks, agreed. For the girls, having a toilet might outweigh having food or water. They didn't intend to budge on this issue.

"W-wait a minute here, you guys! Ten points?! Just for a toilet?!" Ike reacted with horror. It was true, the portable toilets were by far the most expensive item in the manual.

But his desire to be economical and save points was all-consuming. Also, some of the guys could put up with using a cardboard toilet. They probably wanted to refrain from making unnecessary purchases as much as possible.

"Yes, as a toilet, that one's good. But we already have this one! Right? We still have a lot of time left to use our points. It's bad for us to splurge now!"

"You don't get to decide that. Ayanokouji-kun is going to consider all of our opinions and decide. Right, Ayanokouji-kun?" Shinohara ignored Ike and pleaded with me to buy a temporary toilet.

"You're free to consider everyone's opinions, but that doesn't mean you get to make decisions," said Ike, frantically trying to stop me.

One of my uninterested look shut him up, apparently he forgot whose the leader here.

I was not even interested in this argument. Since, I received the manual. I have been running simulations, considering all the possibilities and forming the best plan possible. I was just letting them argue to pass their time, at last they would have no option but to follow my orders.

"Ah, shut up already! Karuizawa-san, say something, will you? He is your good friend. We need a toilet!" Shinohara begged Karuizawa, who have achieved the position of being the girls' representative.

"Really? Well, I suppose it'll be tough, but I really want class points. I guess I'll just grin and bear it."

An unexpected response from Karuizawa, who seemed like she would've been first to complain. She clearly have grown.

"The school has already prepared for our needs. I can endure it. If we take baths in the river and use what we have here, don't you think everything will be fine?"

"But...Karuizawa-san!"

If Karuizawa said as much, then even the strong-willed Shinohara couldn't oppose her openly. Many of the girls followed Karuizawa, after all.

However, Yukimura suddenly joined the fight.

"It's not as though I don't understand the girls' desire to have a temporary toilet. However, I'm not convinced that we ought to arbitrarily spend our points, whether it's for boys or girls. I suppose if you want the toilet, then I'd like to at least make a decision after collecting a majority vote."

He slid his glasses up his nose, voicing his disagreement in a rather aggressive tone.

"I'm just making a natural request for a girl, that's all. It doesn't involve boys at all."

"A natural request? Doesn't involve boys? I can't understand that. Isn't that simply a form of discrimination?"

Ah, these pathetic fools. If I stay quiet even for a second, they resort to their natural state of being halfwits.

Hirata, Kikyou and Chiaki, all of them looked at me to control the situation.

"Discrimination? Ah, this is giving me a headache. Ayanokouji-kun, please make them leave me alone." Shinohara, unable to give up on the toilet matter, frantically pleaded for help.

"This test is a once-in-a-lifetime chance to bridge our point gap with Class B. We can't use valuable points on things like temporary toilets. I have no intention of being in Class C forever. I don't agree with Shinohara-san, who's making arbitrary requests based on her personal wishes. I would like for us to uniformly decide upon a clear policy."

"Huh? Are you trying to say that I'm not considering anything?" she asked.

"Even money can move based purely on instinct. I hate that women argue so emotionally."

As they argued about unimportant topics, I observed other classes. They were still receiving their instructions.

"Huh? That doesn't mean that I want to use our points indiscriminately. What I'm saying is that we should have at least the bare minimum. Do you not understand that?"

I noticed Kouenji was quietly sitting on a branch of a tree and silently observing the situation.

"Both of you calm down. Yukimura-kun, I understand what you mean to say, but if you speak so belligerently we're not going to resolve anything, are we? Let's do this calmly." Hirata tried to calm both of them.

"Calmly? Don't you agree that we should, under no circumstances,

use our points arbitrarily?" Yukimura asked.

"Well..."

Now, Hirata was caught in an increasingly fraught situation. He didn't know what to do, yet frantically tried to mediate while doing his best not to show mounting concern.

"Kiyotaka, why are you not saying anything? This decision falls upon the leader." said Okitani. But, I still remained silent.

"It looks like this test is going to be more complex and challenging than we thought..." I heard Horikita mutter.

"Enough! I have decided. First of all, who here have any experience of camping before?" I asked, finally.

Ike raised his hand hesitantly.

"Good, now listen carefully. Do you see that trail towards the west?" I asked while pointing towards a trail in the west direction, it was wide enough to be a well functional road in a city.

Ike nodded.

"It's your responsibility to lead the class through the forest. Follow the trail until a fork. Move towards east. This Forrest is full of these types of roads. Walk until you reach a source of flowing water. Find a clearing at an elevated plane and settle down. Then wait for me to arrive, got it?"

Ike looked like he was a little overwhelmed but he understood the directions given.

"Ayanokouji-kun, you are not coming with us?" asked Shinohara.

"No, I have some things to discuss with Chabashira-sensei. I will return with the items brought for the exam. Now, move fast. We don't have much time."

The class reluctantly followed Ike, who led them towards the trail.

It was perfect timing, as the classes were finished with their instructions and were trying to decide what to do.

I made my way towards them. This is going to be fun.

There are some changes in the rules that would affect the course of the exam.

The MVP rule was just something I added for the fun. I mean when you have the chance to earn 1 million points for free. It would create some chaos.

Obviously, I increased the number of spots. It's not mentioned in the LN, how many spots are there on the island.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day

Vol-3 Ch-4 The Fellowship

Reads: 1061 | Votes: 43 | Comments: 31

Third Person POV-

"This is the perfect place. Let's settle down here." said the student who was leading the group.

A large group of students, carrying various things came to a stop in a clearing.

"Okay. The water is beautiful, and there's shade that blocks the sunlight. The terrain is level. This might be the ideal place for our base camphere. Amazing, Ike-kun!" the guy named Hirata said.

"Heh heh heh, I know, right?"

The river was about ten meters wide, and the water flowed gently. Deep forests and sandy roads surrounded the river.

"So how do we show that this is ours now?"

The river was pretty wide, and flowed downstream for quite a ways. At first glance, the flat piece of land was surrounded on all sides by the trees.

"A river, a river! What an incredible feeling! And here look! There is some kind of mechanism installed around here! It could be the gadget to get right of possession, or whatever!" cried one of the group member.

The said equipment was installed on an unnaturally placed boulder.

Hirata and his team started setting up the tents and other necessities for camp near the river.

"Oh wow, it's like Ayanokouji-kun predicted that we will find this

spot. He is really amazing isn't it?"

The girls started talking amongst themselves about the greatness of a man called Ayanokouji-kun.

"Oh yeah. It's good to just leave everything to Ayanokouji-kun, right?"

But there discussion was abruptly halted due to the argument between Hirata and a guy named Yukimura.

"That's why I'm saying we should just use the toilet that they gave us."

Yukimura glared at the Hirata.

"I've thought it over, and I believe we should install one toilet first," Hirata said forcefully.

"You don't just get to decide. Ayanokouji has the final say in this matter."

"Installing a toilet might be a necessary expense. To begin with, we have one simple toilet that our class, which has forty students, isn't used to. I have to wonder if we can really take turns effectively without any trouble?"

"That's... If we use it well..."

"It's unrealistic. We have to consider the worst-case scenario. If everyone took three minutes to use the restroom, then it would take an hour and a half or more for everyone to go. Can that possibly work?"

"That's pointless. Not everyone would need to use the toilet at the same time. The school provided us with just one toilet because it was realistic. We should be able to effectively take turns, right?"

"I don't think so. From the beginning, I thought using only one toilet would be impossible. If you reason it out, I think it's less about refraining from spending any points, and more that we need to spend our points effectively. You should know that, Yukimura-kun.

The other classes have most likely come to the same conclusion."

"That's all just speculation on your part. Besides, if the other classes did install the toilets, we'd be twenty points ahead just by doing without them. So that's precisely why we shouldn't install one."

"You're right about that, but it's unlikely that putting up with a faulty toilet will work out in our favor. It'll add unnecessary stress and anxiety. I'm also worried about sanitation. Objectively, we should install at least one toilet."

"Where is Ayanokouji-kun, it's almost an hour since we left the harbor. If he would have been here, this wouldn't be happening." muttered some of the students of Class C.

At that moment, a noise of honking interrupted the on goings. A cargo truck that barely fit the narrow road came to halt.

Ayanokouji Kiyotaka POV-

"Hey guys, well done. This is the perfect spot. All my requirements are met. Good job, Ike. You lead them here."

The class looked like they were participating in a debate. But after I arrived, everyone were focusing on me.

"Hey, you all can unload and start building the camp." I said to the people who came with me in the truck.

At my command, ten grown men came out of the back of the truck. They started unloading a multitude of items.

From several large tents, portable toilets, shower stalls, cartons full of items and many more.

The whole class looked at the scene with shock.

"I want the eight tents in square formation. Then take the large tarpaulin tie it to all the tents in a way that it creates a roof in the middle. But remember to create an opening in the middle, so that

the hot air and smoke from the camp fire can escape." I instructed the workers.

"Keep the portable toilets and the shower stalls towards the spot claiming machine. Rest of the stuff, you can pile it up in the middle. We will sort it out."

As the workers started building our camp. I went towards my speechless classmates.

"Ayanokouji, what the heck is all of this?" Yukimura was the first one to speak.

"As you can see, I have brought the stuff we would need for the entire week."

"B-but, this much!"

"Yes, I brought 6 tents, there are 2 that we got as supplementary. So, all total 8 tents. Each tents will have 5 students. I know 8 students is the limit, but who wants to sleep in an overcrowded place. There is 30 sleeping sets which includes cots, blankets, pillows. So feel free to pick one. There is also sleeping bags and hammocks for those who didn't get the set."

As I told them the arrangement, some looked like they wanted to kiss me. Fortunately, most of them were girls. But some looked at me like I had robbed their grandmas.

"Also, there are two toilets. One for boys and one for girls. Similarly, two shower stalls. Now, moving on to the important things. We have the option to cook anything. I brought the complete kitchen set. Grills, ovens, freezers, utensils. So, there is no problem at all."

I said and left to oversee the construction of the camp. Leaving no chance for anyone to say anything.

After the camp was assembled, a group of guys came to me. They looked displeased with these condition of the camp.

"Ayanokouji, can we talk for a moment." Yukimura who was the

leader of the group called to me.

"Yes, what is it?" I asked in a cheerful mood.

"Look, we know that you are a good leader. You practically saved our future but I don't think that you should lead in this exam." He said. The others nodded too.

"Well, no can do. I am the class representative. It is my responsibility to take care of my class. This includes this test. Trust me, we will be fine."

"It's not about being fine. This test was our opportunity to get to Class A. But you ruined that. I calculated the amount of the stuff you brought and it summed up to be 224 points. You spent all of it just for some comfort. I don't agree with that."

By this time, a crowd had started to form around us.

"Okay, I get it. You are worried about the class. It's understandable, but getting to Class A is not our only goal. We should enjoy our highschool life too. We literally have three years to reach Class A. Also, you didn't add 8 points for the labour."

"What! But that doesn't mean intentionally throwing away this test. Just because the girls wanted something, you being the simp brought the whole damn manual. We should be saving these points, not burn them to ashes."

"Look, there is no point in arguing now. The theme of this special test is freedom and I want the freedom to enjoy my summer vacation in a island. End of the topic."

Even though, the points that Yukimura said had some truth to it. Still, most of the class agreed with me.

I had a simple mindset, winning by literally working our ass off wasn't enough. If I win, it should be while I was chilling and others were doing my work.

"But, I do have some plans for the test. We are going to occupy some spots. Even if we held onto three or four spots, we would be

easily earning 60 to 80 points."

Even though Yukimura wasn't satisfied. It did somewhat change the opinion of his group.

"First of all, the assigned leader for our class for this special test would be Onodera."

The girl in question didn't expect me to choose her.

"Me? Why?" she asked.

"Well, I cannot choose someone who is already in some form of leadership position in our class. That would be too obvious, but we also need the leader to be athletic, so that he/she can travel to all the occupied spots three times a day and they should be responsible for carrying the card. This is the key to our success, if we lose it. It's game over."

I gave her the card which had her name on it.

"Now, to prevent an outsider to figure out our leader. We would always travel in a group of five. Whenever, claiming a spot or renewing the ownership, the same five will surround the machine. Got it?"

Everyone nodded their heads. I proceeded to give further instructions.

"Sodou, Chiaki, Minami and I will be the ones accompanying Onodera. We shall be known as the fellowship of the card." I said, deriving the name from a popular movie that I saw.

"Hey, I got that reference." exclaimed Professor.

"Next, I want a group of people accompanying us to a spot that I found. It has a plantation of corn. We will claim the spot and collect the corn. Another group led by Kushida, search for fruits or vegetables. I have an inkling that such fields are scattered throughout the island but don't wander off too far."

"Hirata, I am leaving you in charge. Do the suitable preparation for

a campfire. Send someone to collect some dry sticks. Kei and company, your job is to stock all the food materials properly, they should last seven days. Use the containers, for storing the food in a dry place."

"Professor, your responsibile for the proper lighting and electrical connections of the camp. Connect all the electronic things, like that portable washing machine or the oven and the light bulbs with the generator. But before that follow us to the corn field. I have a job for you."

"Makida, you are specialist in botany. Do a perimeter check and search for any harmful plants. I don't want anyone to get sick of poisoning or something. That will be all."

I finished giving instructions to everyone. All of the Class C dispersed to fulfill their duties. Yukimura's group too, reluctantly followed Hirata's orders. The fellowship of the card assembled near the bicycles that I had bought. Yes, there were bicycles available too.

"Guys, our minimum goal should be acquiring four spots. I already know two places. First we start by claiming our home base. Then we move towards the corn field."

We each chose a bike and took it towards the spot machine. Onodera, did the deed and we had officially gained our first spot.

Then we rode our bikes to the corn field. Although, it took some time as we had to travel slowly for the people following us on foot. The field was on the center of the island, so I wanted to claim it first, before any other class could.

Once we had reached our destination, we saw the size of the corn field. Although, it wasn't too big, but it had enough to feed a class for a week if properly rationed.

"Start collecting the corn from the area farthest from the machine, go column by column. Don't collect randomly, it won't be efficient. Also, don't take all of it. They will be spoiled rotten, we will collect the rest later." I instructed them.

I told them to collect in such a way that half of the field would still have a stock.

"Professor, come with me. We have some work to do. Fellowship, claim the spot."

I took Sotomura for an important task which was a secret. Soon, when the collection of corn was done. We left the area to move towards the next spots.

The people carrying the corn went back to the base.

It was nearly 3 pm when we returned to our base camp. We had a successful run and found out three more spots other than the base camp and the corn field.

First we had followed a trail which led us to the top of the hill. It was located on the North East of our base camp. Even though we has bicycles, it took a lot of effort to ride uphill. After claiming it, we decided to move towards the East Side Beach.

I knew that there were four beaches on the island. Each on one of the direction. Class A who had monopolized the West side of the island would have claimed the West Beach, similarly Class B settling on the North would have claimed the North Beach. And Class D on the South.

But luckily on the way down from the hill, we came across a waterfall. It was another spot. After taking in the scenery, we finally reached the beach and claimed that area too.

I had decided that five spots would be enough for us. Earning a whopping 105 points if maintained properly for a week. It took almost an hour for this whole journey from and back.

On arriving at the camp, I saw a figure that I didn't expect. The silver haired girl was sitting alone, quietly in a camp chair. She had a sad expression on her face.

There was a red, swollen mark on her cheek. Someone had hit her

pretty hard. Which genuinely pissed me off. Nobody touches her and gets to see another sunrise.

Before, I could move towards her. Hirata interrupted me.

"Ayanokouji-kun, I am glad you are back. I wanted to talk to you about Shiina-san of Class D. I had sent some of the students to gather some wood and sticks for the camp fire, but on their way back. They came upon her, sitting against a tree, alone. So, they couldn't leave her there and brought her back to the camp."

He continued speaking, while I was going through all the possibilities and reasonings for this happening.

"Apparently there was some dispute between her and her class, so they banished her. Look at her, she is injured. I know that she might be a spy sent by Class D. But we can't just abandon her in the forest. I take all the responsibility, but just let her stay. I request you."

After Hirata finished his rant. I finally spoke.

"Will you let me talk, Hirata? I never disallowed her from remaining in the camp. She is my good friend, I wouldn't do that to her." I said.

Hirata looked visibly relieved. I guess he was ready to fight me on this matter. I moved towards Hiyori, who looked really awkward sitting in this environment.

Everyone were looking at her as a potential enemy, I don't think it's a pleasant feeling.

"Hiyori, what happened to you? Are you okay? Did anybody hurt you? Just tell me the name."

Hearing my voice, Hiyori's mood brightened up. She immediately ran towards me and hugged me tightly.

"Hey, what happened?" I asked softly after a moment of silence.

Everyone had stopped what they were doing and just staring at us, I

subtly gave them a sign to just continue with their task and leave us alone. I slowly took Hiyori a little away from the center of the camp.

"It was Ryūen-kun, I didn't agree with his methods, so he told me to leave the camp. I tried to ignore me, so he slapped me." she said.

I wasn't angry on Ryūen when he trapped Sodou into his little trick, I wasn't even annoyed when he falsely accused Ike and Yamauchi. But right now, I was feeling that I haven't felt before, no maybe I did feel it but that was a long time ago.

I was angry maybe and annoyed. Yes, annoyed. No, I was furious at Ryūen for doing such lowly deeds. I knew that he is a guy who would do anything to defeat his opponents but sometimes he doesn't know the limits.

Hiyori was one of the only person, who I wouldn't think of hurting her. Her pure innocence and her mannerisms reminded me of someone. Someone, a long time ago.

No, there is no need to think of that. I didn't feel a thing then, neither do I feel anything now. That's the truth, or is it?

"Hey, it's okay. You can stay with us till this test ends. Think of us as your own class." I told her.

"Mei-chan, would you come here for a moment." I called.

She was helping Kei and her group to sort the kitchen items. She took her leave from there group and came to where we were standing.

"Hiyori, meet Wang Mei-yu. She prefers to be called Mei-chan. Mei meet Shiina Hiyori."

Both of them were shy girls, so it was a little awkward but they shook hands.

"Mei-chan, Hiyori will stay with us for the rest of the exam. So, it's your responsibility to make her feel comfortable."

"M-me! But, Kushida-san would be a better option, she is a lot better at making friends." Mei argued.

"Kikyou has already enough responsibilities, you wouldn't mind helping her, would you?"

'I-I guess, I mean I don't usually talk much, so I apologize in advance if I make you uncomfortable, Shiina-san." she told Hiyori.

"Oh, no. I don't talk much either. Usually, I just like to spend my time reading." Hiyori replied.

"Really, I like reading too. Which is your favorite genre?"

I left both of them to get to know each other better. It's ironic how you start to talk more or interact more with the person who has the same interests as you.

That's why I chose Mei for the job, even though Kikyou is great at making friends. Hiyori would enjoy the company of Mei better.

Once five o'clock arrived, Kushida and her group returned.

While others were unable to, Ike had set up the camp fire. Professor and Kei had completed their duties.

With all of the Class C together, the camp came alive. With the pleasant lighting and the sound system working, it looked more like an outdoor party rather than a survival test.

Sounds of laughter and joy could be heard all around. Even Yukimura, who was opposed to this had started to enjoy. He and the members of the boys group were playing cards near the central campfire. Girls were gossiping about random stuff.

Kikyou and her group were successful in bringing something which looked a lot like tomatoes or maybe cherries.

"Oh hey, this is bog bilberry! Did you find these, Kikyou-chan? That's amazing, y'know!"

Ike came over, checking out the fruit and telling us what was what.

"Kanji-kun, do you know what this is?" Kikyou asked.

"Yeah. It's a fruit, a bog bilberry. I've eaten 'em before when I went camping in the mountains. As you can tell, they look and taste like blueberries. It's the akebia quinata. It's sweet and tasty. Oh wow, this really takes me back, man."

When did he start using terms like akebia quinata? Everyone watched Ike with interest as he smiled, enjoying the nostalgic fruit.

Shinohara bombarded Ike with questions, and he answered her directly.

Azuma, Rino, Ichihashi, Chiaki and Kikyou got started on making dinner. They were the only one who knew how to cook. The boys too helped a little bit, preparing salads and stuff.

They were also giving us lessons on how to cook the recipes.

We were having Soba Noodles with Cod Fish with some Grilled Kebabs. The smell was mouthwatering.

"By the way... That girl, Shiina-san from Class D? I've seen her before."

Satou, who had finally noticed Hiyori, eyed her with suspicion. Hiyori continued to chat with Mei, who was quite talkative today.

"Well, it sounds like there's been some kind of trouble in her class..."

Yamauchi, who I came to know was the person who found Hiyori, explained why Hiyori seemed to have been isolated from her classmates.

"I see. Your judgment was correct. We can't just leave her."

"But, Ayanokouji-kun... Couldn't she be a spy? I mean, if she can spot the leader..." Ike asked, hands over his head for attention. He was really popping off with his intellect in this test. The Ike, I knew would have tried to ask her breasts size.

I stood up from my chair, gaining everyone's attention.

"Everybody, there's an important announcement. You may have noticed that Shiina Hiyori of Class D is present in our camp. Due to some disagreement between her and Class D students, she'll would continue to remain here for the rest of the exam." I announced.

"Anyone who thinks she is a spy, don't. She is a good friend of mine. I expect you all to treat her as one of our own classmate."

I sat down again and resumed eating dinner. It really was a good idea to not buy the meal sets. Freshly made food tastes much better and we also saved ourselves from the cutthroat price of 20 points per each set of meal.

"Wow, when you look at them like this, the girls' groups are kind of remarkable."

Yamauchi, in the middle of eating, pointed to each group individually.

"There's the Empress Team, led by Karuizawa. Then there's Kushida chan's Friendship Team, Shinohara's Arrogant Team and finally Horikita's unknown team."

All of the guys huddled relatively close together as they ate, even the idiot company had joined the boys group, but the girls sat in their individual teams. There was a clear wall between them, like they were groups from other classes.

Maybe Kushida's team was the most neutral of all of them, or just held a lot of influence. Horikita's group was the most isolated, her group had all the people who were mostly unknown, they didn't talk to rest of the class, much like Horikita herself.

"Poor Sakura, she had to sit with Horikita. I wonder if I should eat with her," Yamauchi said.

It was true, since the day at the amusement park. Sakura has been seen with Horikita's group.

"You're probably better off giving up, don't you think? You'd just scare her."

"Damn. I want to get to know her better, but she's way too introverted..."

Even though she had changed a lot, Sakura probably still found it difficult to deal with pushy types like Yamauchi.

Despite being warned, Yamauchi seemed impatient to go over to her.

"What the hell, Haruki? That's no fair, stalking a lone beautiful woman like that. Come on, let me join in!"

Ah, there's the Ike we all know.

Ike, seeing Yamauchi's glances, misunderstood and approached him.

"I have to say, Sakura's breasts are really something else. You don't often see breasts that big on a first-year high school student. Her clothes are just bulging. She's way too sexy. Her boobs alone make her even more attractive than Kikyou-chan."

Ike stared intently at Sakura's breasts, like he wanted to devour them.Yamauchi blocked Ike's line of sight.

"Hey, what the hell, dude?"

"Don't just look at Sakura like a pervert. Besides, you're aiming for Kushida-san, aren't you?"

"Well, yeah. But it's all right, isn't it? I mean, an idol belongs to everyone, right? Haruki, could you be... Ooh, are you Sakura's-"

"I-It's not like that. Come on, let's eat."

Apparently Yamauchi wanted to hide the fact that he was changing targets and going after Sakura.

"Mind I remind you of what happened last time you were being perverts?" I warned both of them. Even though they had stopped being perverts in public, they would still talk about such things when there is no girl around.

"Hey, we aren't being perverts. Besides, it is night, with nothing left to do. It is only natural that the flow of the conversation would lead to girls." protested Ike.

"Come to think of it, where's Kouenji-kun? We haven't seen him since the test started."

Everyone had gathered for the attendance, but it looked like Kouenji was absent.

"Oh, Kouenji complained about being in poor physical condition and returned to the ship. Of course, that means that you've had thirty points deducted. Those are the rules, so there's nothing to be done. Kouenji has retired, and he's obligated to stay onboard the ship for one week for medical treatment," said Chabashira-sensei.

Hmm....

"Whaaaaat?!"

Screams sounded throughout the night.

"Oh, you've gotta be kidding me! Kouenji, you jerk! What the hell were you thinking?!"

The normally silent Yukimura shouted and kicked the ground. I knew Kouenji was a free spirit, but I never imagined he would just up and retire.

Maybe he didn't care about reaching Class A. If it made his life easier, losing thirty points didn't matter at all.

"Goddamn it! We lost thirty points! This sucks!"

"Ayanokouji-kun, what should we do?"

"There's nothing to be done. Kouenji went back, we lost thirty points. The only thing we can do is make the best of the time we spend on the island."

It was a feeble attempt at comforting the crowd. Most of them were unsatisfied by my answer, but I wasn't going to waste my time on

this.

Both the boys and girls were furious over Kouenji's actions, but could do nothing about it. Kouenji's loud, haughty laughter reverberated in our minds.

This one was a major chapter. The exam has begin and so have Ayanokouji's planning.

I can guarantee that nobody has seen the result of an island exam this crazy anywhere, it's awesome.

I have added some bits to Ayanokouji's character, if you read the chapter you would notice it.

If anybody doesn't like it, I am really sorry but this is my take. I want this to be different from the LN.

Even though I am not releasing the list of things Ayanokouji bought, just imagine any kind of comfort you can have while camping, he brought it.

Also, keep in mind he spent 232 points on the stuff till now. And Kouenji retired so Class C's total stands at 38 points.

Anyways that's all for now.

Have a wonderful day

Vol-3 Ch-5 The First Day

Reads: 1457 | Votes: 58 | Comments: 45

We returned from our morning round. We had claimed the spots again at night, with this round we had gained 15 points.

The fellowship disbanded, some went to their tents to get some rest while others were going for a morning bath in the river.

The heat and humidity, combined with an hour of cycling up and down a hill had us sweating buckets.

We'd kept the luggage outside in order to make the tents as spacious as possible. After looking around to make sure I was alone, I found a singularly colored piece of luggage. It was Hiyori's bag. Since her bag was different, it was easy to spot. I am sorry, Hiyori. But this is necessary.

I grabbed it without hesitation and checked inside. If someone saw me doing this, that would lead to some weird rumors. Inside, I found the same kinds of things that everyone else had, like towels, a change of clothes, underwear, etc. However...

"A digital camera, huh?"

On the bottom of the camera, I found a rental sticker. Why did Hiyori have this? I considered the possible reasons, trying to think from her perspective. After conjuring up an image of her in my head, several possibilities suggested themselves. I checked the camera's power source. It had no data, and no sign that it'd been used. After I finished my inspection, I returned the item to the bag, and went towards the shower stall for a quick bath.

"Good morning, Ayanokouji-kun. Heading to the bathroom?"

Hirata was awake. He greeted me near the bathroom stalls with a toothbrush in hand. Maybe he noticed that I was sweatier than

usual.

"Ah. Yes, we just returned from our trip. So, I thought it would do me some good to bath in cold water."

He nodded as if he understood my reasoning.

"Ayanokouji-kun, can I talk to you about the exam?"

"Yeah, sure."

"We spent 232 points yesterday, if we include Kouenji-kun's penalty. It goes up to 262. I can't help but think, how will we win the exam? I mean don't get me wrong, we are grateful for the comfort we are getting, but the class also wants to reach Class A." He said with hesitation and nervously.

I put a hand on his shoulder and gave him a confident grin.

"Hirata, there's no need to worry. Have I ever let this class down? Trust me, there is no one in this island who could defeat me."

This boosted his confidence, he put on the classic Hirata smile which flatters the girls.

"Want to come and bath together in the river?" he asked.

Even though I liked my privacy, I was really tempted to bath in a river for the first time. So, I accepted the offer.

As we headed to the river, we came across an unexpected person.

"Hey guys, what are you doing here?"

Kanzaki, looked our way. Some other boys were with him, although I hadn't met them personally, I knew there names from the OAA.

They appeared surprised, as if they hadn't expected us at such an early hour, but quickly regained their composure.

"First day's over, so I wondered how you were doing. I thought I'd check on you. Your location's great. Also, I am kind of jealous of

your camp. Why did you guys bought so many things?"

He seemed legitimately impressed by our base camp. He didn't appear to have a hidden agenda.

"You're Kanzaki-kun, from Class B, aren't you?"

Hirata seemed to remember him.

"Did I surprise you? I'm sorry, I'm not here to cause trouble."

With that apology, Kanzaki walked away.

"Kanzaki. Where's Class B camping?"

Maybe he wouldn't tell us, but I thought I'd try asking. Kanzaki answered without hesitation.

"There are large broken trees along the path from here to the north beach. If you enter the forest to the southwest and walk a bit, you can find our campsite. You shouldn't get lost if you enter by those large trees. If you need something, go ahead and tell her you can come by."

With that, Kanzaki left. Hirata gave me a strange look.

"I'm guessing he's your friend, hmm? What'd he mean by 'go ahead and tell her'?"

"Yes, we have an unofficial alliance with Class B since the mid terms. You didn't know that? By her he meant Ichinose, there class representative, she is a good friend."

He was caught off-guard with the alliance part. Looking back, nobody other than Kikyou, Chiaki and I knew about the alliance.

"I wonder if they came here to do some reconnaissance, see how we've spent our points." Hirata said.

Doubtless that was one reason, after seeing Kanzaki's slightly apologetic expression. You could estimate the number of points spent just by the number of toilets, showers, and tents. However,

that was probably not the only thing Kanzaki and the others wanted to know. They must've wanted to discover our class leader.

After all, the rights of exclusive spot possession expired every eight hours. Perhaps they'd hoped to see the spot updated.

However, I'd planned for that.

Hirata seemed to be more anxious. He muttered while drying off.

"I wonder if our strategy's wrong. Even if we can't beat the other classes, I think it'd be good for us to unify on this test. That's the real reason I don't want them to discover our leader."

A splendidly handsome man faced such constant trouble.

"Have some faith, will you? Don't worry so much. You should relax a little."

"Thank you. Coming from you, that honestly makes me really happy."

+-+

After morning roll call, we began to explore. I provided roles to the students of my class. We began to function like a well oiled machine.

The cooking crew was preparing a delicious breakfast. While the others were busy in camp maintenance.

"What the hell, you guys?!"

Ike's angry voice boomed throughout the campsite. I looked in his direction, and saw two male students wearing wide, smug grins.

A pained expression flashed across Hiyori's face for a moment, but then she quickly ducked behind the tent to hide herself. I really wanted to punch these guys.

"Komiya and Kondou, huh?"

"Wow, you Class C rejects are really living frugal, eh? I guess that's what I'd expect from a class of defectives."

I mean, if this was frugal then I don't know what would be luxurious.

They were stuffing their faces with potato chips and drinking bottles of soda. Not water. Soda.

"I don't think 'The Class D' students should talk like that. Now, go run back to your master like a good dog. Or your class might lose the 260 class points they still have due to my goodwill. Now shoo!"

I did a shooing motion. They glared at me with hatred and left but not before relaying me a message.

"We have a message from Ryuuen-san. If you want to enjoy your summer vacation to the fullest, come to the south beach right now. Don't hang back. If you're sick of living like idiots, then we're happy to share our luxuries."

"Okay, ask him how much is he enjoying after he lost 1.6 million points and 400 class points to us. Tell him we are enjoying plenty because of that."

They left pretty quickly after I bragged about there humiliating loss.

Their bizarre visit aside, I'd obtained valuable information about Class C: they had luxury items, snacks and soda and so on.

After an appetizing breakfast, I searched for Horikita. She had immediately returned to her tent after eating her food.

I saw no sign of her. I called for her in front of her tent. Although she didn't reply, the tent shook slightly, and I heard the sounds of cloth rubbing together. Horikita slowly stepped outside.

"You okay?"

"Yes, why wouldn't I be?"

"No, you are just avoiding everyone since we started the test. I

mean more than usual."

"I am fine. There is no need for worry. Do you need me to do some chores?"

"No, No. You can rest. I don't want you to over work yourself."

I knew that her health was getting worse. It's just the matter of timing, if she could only hold on till the test ended.

After talking with Horikita, I met with Chiaki and left to visit the other classes.

+-+

As we neared the edge of the forest, we saw the Southern Beach, and the large group of Class D students on that beach.

Chiaki and I could never have imagined the situation we beheld.

"No way... All this stuff... Is it even possible?"

Even beholding the very real spectacle, Chiaki kept repeating the word "impossible." I felt the same. Did Ryūen copy me. They had installed temporary toilets and shower rooms, they also had a tarp to protect against sunlight, a barbecue, chairs, and a parasol. They had snacks and drinks. Everything required for a good, relaxing time was here. We smelled the smoke of cooking meat, and heard laughter.

Pretty similar to our class but there were differences -
Jet skis whizzed past the shoreline. Students were enjoying themselves in the ocean, screaming with joy. A passenger boat anchored by the pier, it was the transport to the main ship, which was docked a little far from the island. I saw students swimming in the ocean, playing volleyball and beach flags on the shore, celebrating with barbecues. Also, I saw the tent where they were stockpiling food. Based on a rough calculation, they'd likely spent 100 points or more.

"Let's check things out. I wonder what Class D is thinking?"

We came out from the bushes and walked to the beach. One of the male students whose name was Oda Takumi, noticed us and called out to another male student nearby.

We couldn't see his face too well, since he was leaning over in his chair. One of the boys rushed over to us.

"Um, Ryuuen-san has requested your presence," he said.

Judging from the timidity of his voice, he was either frightened or naturally listless.

"Okay, Herald of Class D. Would your king meet us even though we didn't bring any presents?" I asked sarcastically.

He wasn't amused by my attempt at a joke. We accompanied the boy to the center of the camp. As we approached the ocean, the delicious smell of cooked meat wafted by our noses.

Even though I had already eaten my breakfast, walking through the jungle for hours tend to empty your stomach.

"I thought someone was sniffing around. It's you, huh? What business do you have with me?"

"You seem to be doing well for yourself. This looks like quite the extravagant party."

Ryuuen, tanned and clad in his swimwear, laid back in his chair. He flashed his white teeth at us.

"Just as you see. We're enjoying our summer vacation."

He spread his arms wide, proudly showing off the extravaganza.

"Although, I think my class is having more fun." he said.

"I thought this was a competition of who can save more points, not which class is more happy."

"Ah! Don't speak like those Class B peasants. You and I both know that this test is useless. It's better to enjoy our time here rather than

toil and hardwork. Class B, the lowest of all, they have to put up with starvation, heat, and futility just to save a measly 100 or 200 class points. It makes me laugh."

"That I can agree to, this test is of the theme 'freedom', so we should do whatever we want."

"Although, I can't help but notice that you didn't bought much for living a week, your food stock won't last a day. Are you guys leaving, perhaps?" I asked.

"Kukuku, I know you would figure out my strategy. After all, the X knows everything. Yes, once we have spent all our points, we would just bid the island goodbye and spend the rest of the duration of the exam in the ship. Of course, X would have already predicted this. Who is he, or should I say she?" he asked as he looked suspiciously at Chiaki.

It was a fair assumption, considering that she is just standing quietly and observing everything. Chiaki was also present during the first meeting in Sodou's case. No doubt he would know that we are seen together often.

"What are you talking about? Do you like Quadratic Equations that much?" Another bag joke. Why is my humor so bad!

"Hide it all you want, but I will find your master and I will defeat him or her."

"Okay buddy, whatever you say. Now to important matters. How many points did you use? To be able to enjoy this level of entertainment, I mean."

"Hmm. Well, I didn't make a precise calculation," Ryuuen responded guilelessly.

"Tch. Already getting warm. Hey, Ishizaki. Bring me some cold water, right away."

Ryuuen poured out his remaining water on the sand, almost in provocation. Ishizaki, who'd been playing volleyball nearly, panicked and rushed to get Ryuuen another water. A mountain of

used cardboard boxes were piled up inside the tent, likely they were once filled with food and water. Ishizaki peered into a cooler beside the boxes.

"You guys want anything? Chilled drinks?Barbeque?"

We declined his offer. Knowing him, he would just blame us for stealing stuff and try to disqualify our class.

"As you can see, we're enjoying our summer vacation. We're not your enemies. Do you understand?"

"I guess so, it's always good to have one less enemy."

Ishizaki ran over, dripping with sweat as he brought the water. He handed a cold bottle of water to Ryuuen. However, Ryuuen threw it back at Ishizaki.

"I said to bring me cold water. This water's warm."

"I... B-but..."

"Hmm?"

Ryuuen's pupils were just like those of a snake. Ishizaki's body stiffened. He picked up the bottle and ran back toward the tent.

Only if I had a life like that, people serving me while I relaxed. Instead, I have to carry a whole class on my shoulders.

"You are a pathetic one, aren't you? Treating your classmates like slaves. Honestly, how did you even become a leader. If I was in your class, you would never be anything more than a bully. A successful class is the class which cooperates, has cohesion. Your class lacks both, as a result you are Class D." I said with passion.

"Cooperation? Don't make me laugh. People betray each other with ease. People lie. Relationships built on trust just aren't viable. You can only trust yourself. If you've finished your reconnaissance, leave. But if you wish, we'd welcome you here. You're free to enjoy yourself, whether it's to eat meat or play on jet skis. And Matsushita Chiaki, would you prefer to have a different kind of fun with me? I

can prepare a tent for personal use."

Chiaki ignored him and started to leave, but I stopped her.

"There is one more piece of business, Why did you hit Hiyori?"

"Ah. She ran out of here rather suddenly. She went looking for help from another class in the end? Pathetic girl."

Ryuuen snorted in disgust, then laid back in his chair.

"There are helpless idiots in this world. A ruler doesn't need subordinates who disobey orders. We determined that I would use our classpoints to my liking. That's the fact of the matter. Besides, it's pointless to raise the banner of revolution against the ruling class."

"That's why she got a light punishment."

He made a gesture like slapping someone's cheek. Ryuuen had indeed hit her.

He was intentionally trying to piss me off. He knew that Hiyori is my good friend. But unfortunately for him, I don't have such weaknesses.

"Another boy defied me as well, so I had him driven out. I heard he didn't die, so he's probably off somewhere eating grass and insects to survive."

"If Shiina is with you, you're better off chasing her away. If you shower her with your awkward sympathies, you'll have one extra person to prepare water, food, and bedding for. Anyway, if you can't deal with it, she can return here. If she grovels on the ground, maybe I'll forgive her. I've a tolerant heart."

He smiled tauntingly, he was having fun.

Just you wait, you bastard. You provoked the wrong guy. When this test is over, you would regret saying this.

"Let's go, Chiaki. We don't want to lose anymore of our brain cells

by being in the vicinity of such daft creature."

With that we left the Class D camp.

"Kiyotaka, what did he mean by spending rest of the exam on the ship. We can do that?"

"He is going to do what Kouenji did. Kouenji claimed that his physical condition was poor and he was mentally unstable. In that case, it's better to just retire. If everyone in Class D did that, they could return to the ship and go about their lives. That's his plan."

"Then Class D is irrelevant in this test. Their self-destruction will help us."

It will... It certainly will.

In order to make effective use of the extra time on our hands, we decided to check out how Classes A and B were doing. It was almost an hour to noon and I had to return before 2 pm, to reclaim the ownership of all the five spots.

We went deeper into the forest, past the roots of the big, broken tree, just as Kanzaki had instructed. When I thought on it now, though, the tree looked as though the school had broken it intentionally, to use as a landmark. It hinted that there was a spot just further ahead.

The moment we set foot in the deep forest, I noticed a slight change. Quite a few students' tracks stood out on this path, which made it easier to walk. If we simply followed the path, we'd probably arrive at Class B's campsite. That might be why Kanzaki hadn't provided a detailed explanation. So far, of all the ordeals on this island, the blood-sucking mosquitoes that went for our arms and legs were the most irritating. Soon, we arrived at Class B's base camp.

"Well, I suppose it's just what we'd expect from Class B..."

Their way of living was entirely different from ours. Their class had made practical use of their spot, with many trees surrounding a well. They didn't have enough space to spread out three or four

tents, so they'd made good use of the space by putting up hammocks. Despite starting in much the same way, our class had chosen completely different items. But what surprised me the most was the atmosphere.

If it had been Class C living in the same conditions, they wouldn't stop complaining. But Class B members were going on with their day with a smile on their faces.

"Huh? Ayanokouji-kun? And Matsushita-san?"

Ichinose called to us, almost as if she'd sensed the arrival of sudden visitors. She was trying to tie a string around a tree to put up a hammock. Kanzaki sat a little further away from her.

She wore a jersey, which really suited her, and appeared lively. And I mean it really suited her, her assets were highlighted and her hourglass figure was eye pleasing.

I wondered how could her classmates could live without ogling her all the time. I didn't notice that I was ogling her up until Chiaki pretended to clear her throat, while glaring at me simultaneously.

"So, your class seems to be functioning well, despite obstacles." I said, ignoring Chiaki's deathly stare.

"Ha ha, yeah. It was really difficult at first! But we tried a bunch of different things, and it worked out. Though the list of chores just keeps on increasing. There's still a ton of work left," said Ichinose with a big smile.

"I'm sorry if we're getting in the way."

"Oh, I'm sorry. That probably sounded like I was trying to drive you guys away. I think it's all right if you hang around for a while. You probably came here to ask me something, right?"

Ichinose welcomed us without any hint of protest.

She sat down on the hammock, which she just tied to the tree and invited me to sit with her.

Before I could move towards her, Chiaki held me back with a forced smile.

"Oh, it won't be necessary. We are fine."

Okay, now I regret bringing her with me. If I had brought one of the boys, they would have encouraged me to sit with Ichinose on a hammock, where our bodies would be touching each other.

"I was thinking that it would benefit us to continue the alliance between our classes, what do you think Ichinose?"

"I think so, too."

"Well, how many points have you used so far? What did you purchase? Also, if you could tell us the value of your tools that would really help. We would disclose information in return, of course."

I asked one question after another. Kanzaki, also joined in the meeting.

Ichinose, with a grin, took out a manual from a bag near her feet. She showed us a white sheet of paper, which itemized what they'd purchased, and read aloud.

"Hammocks. Cookware. Small tent, lantern, and temporary toilet. Fishing rod, a water shower... If we combine those items with the food we purchased, the total comes to exactly seventy points."

"That's quite efficient planning. Although, living in these conditions is hard. I have no doubts that Class B could successfully survive this test."

"Thank you for the praise, Ayanokouji-kun. But, I was surprised to hear about your camp from Kanazaki-kun. Apparently, you have spent a lot of points." Ichinose asked me.

"Yes, actually. Chiaki would you mind terribly, please state all the items and their prices we have bought to Kanzaki. Leave nothing out." I requested Chiaki.

"Also, Kanzaki can you give her a tour of your camp. Maybe, we could learn some tips to be efficient." I said without waiting for Chiaki's response.

My goal was to send both of them away. I didn't want anyone interfering with my plans.

Ichinose requested Kanzaki to show their camp to Chiaki and he couldn't say no.

As Kanzaki and Chiaki left, although the latter left reluctantly. I sat down beside Ichinose on the hammock.

Ichinose realized how close we were sitting and started blushing.

"So, I guess you would want to know why I am giving up on this exam, right?" I asked.

"I didn't meant that you gave up, but I found it strange for someone like you to spend so carelessly. No offence."

"Actually, I did kind of give up on this test in a sense. I have already spent most of the points we had gotten. But I did have a reason for that."

"What do you mean?"

"I am doing this for the long term. My prediction is that there would be several more of these special tests, in the next three years. So, there is no need to try hard in the very first. That is the reason, the school gave us freedom to even enjoy the stay on this island if we want to."

"I guess that makes sense. But wouldn't it be better to get as much points possible early, so you have an easy time later on?"

"Yes, it would certainly help. But these types of test requires the whole class to be united and working as a team. Lower classes like us, don't have that luxury. So, I am looking at this test as a way to get my class together. Giving them a comfortable environment to bond with others. So, that we could efficiently tackle other tests in the future. And we already gained 400 points due to Ryūen's

mistake, so we are okay in that area."

"That is smart in a way. I guess not every class is united like ours. It would help you a lot to lead a class which cooperates with you."

She understood my reasoning and I expected nothing less. As a leader she knows how easy it is when your team members listen to every word you say.

Class D was united under Ryūen's dictatorship, Class B was united under the banner of friendship and camaraderie. Class A still didn't have any proper leader but they had the common sense to follow the acting leader without questions.

"Also, one of my classmates have retired so, there is no point in saving points."

"What? Who?" she asked with concern.

"Kouenji, he doesn't listen to anyone. Apparently, he didn't want to live on an island with peasants. He is a free spirit. I have already given up on him."

"Oh, I can't imagine how it would feel to have someone like that in your class." she said with pity.

In the distance, I could see Chiaki talking with some Class B students. Although, she kept looking at our direction.

"Ichinose, what do you know about Class A and Class D's status in this exam?" I asked.

"Well, I don't know much about Class A. They have been rather defensive, or rather you could say secretive."

"Secretive?"

"Yes, they have made a cave as their home base and have hidden the only entrance with a large tarp. They have guards all the time patrolling the surrounding area. It's like a secret facility." she answered.

"Hmm.. And what do you think of Class D's strategy. I assume, you already know what they are doing."

"Yes, I saw through Ryūen-kun's plan already. They have spent everything and once they are done enjoying, all of them would retire from the test. Although, it's a smart plan, I don't think it's a good one." she said.

"Yes, but it helps us. It means, Class C wouldn't be last." I said humorously.

"Still, I can't help but feel like Ryūen-kun is hiding something. I don't know, it's just an instinct. He has always been a trickster, this could be another one of his plans."

Ichinose was smart enough to figure out Ryūen's plan. There was a reason she is in Class B.

"Ichinose, did you come across any rogue student from Class D, looking for a shelter?"

"Yes! But how did you know? A student named Kaneda arrived at our camp yesterday evening. He had an injury, apparently there was a fallout between him and Ryūen."

"I see, there is one in our camp too. Shiina Hiyori, she too was hit by Ryūen."

"Oh, I don't understand what goes on in Ryūen-kun's brain, but this is wrong. Now I feel bad for sending Kaneda away." she said with genuine sadness.

"What do you mean, you didn't give him a refuge?" I asked.

It came out more accusing than I wanted but it was very out of character for Class B to not help someone in need, even if they are from another class.

"No! No! It's not that I didn't wanted to help, it's just that Kanzaki-kun convinced me that he might be a spy." she said with her head down.

So, Kanzaki is more than just a underling. That's interesting, this does bring Class B into the competition too.

"Still, I am surprised. I mean, I thought Class B always helps everyone."

"That is true, but we can't always help others when we are in direct competition like special tests. These tests are important for reaching Class A and we intend to fight with everything we have got." she said with determination.

"Also, we didn't just leave Kaneda-kun to defend for himself in the forest. Kanzaki-kun, Shibata-kun and Hamaguchi-kun escorted him to the starting point and made sure that he retired. I mean it's better to live on a luxury cruise rather than living on an island with uncomfortable conditions."

It was a smart move from Kanzaki, not only he prevented a potential security breach but he made sure that Class D lost 30 points. Although, I don't think Ryūen would care.

But this opens up so many opportunities for me. My brain was running simulations of every possibility. Soon, I arrived at a conclusion.

"Ichinose, I have a proposition."

Finally, I am back!!!!!!

Took a week off, had a kind of a writer block. Couldn't come up with anything.

But hopefully, now I can write again continuously.

This arc could possibly have more chapter than volume 1 or maybe not.

But I am planning to do a game of capture the flag. Do you like the idea? It would be something new.

Also, Ichinose and Class B are not that foolish in this story. They would be competent and justify, why they are in Class B.

Anyways that's all for now

Have a wonderful day.

I am back!!!!!!

Reads: 362 | Votes: 24 | Comments: 10

After more than a year. I am finally back. Had to focus on getting in a college and stuff. Didn't even realise that a year passed by.

The college I am in is really strict and kept me busy all the time with all the exams and assignments. Didn't get any free time and eventually the story slipped out of my mind.

But here I am. Hopefully, will update regularly till summer Vacation ends. After that I will try to post whenever I can but the updates could be slow.

I will take time to update the next chapter since, I forgot literally everything about this story, may have to read it again myself. But hopefully will be back on track.

Anyways that's all until next time